



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### **Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### **About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

**B** 1,379,328

4  
R

M



M

THE UNIV



M



M



M

CHIGAN



M



M



M

THE UNIV



MICHIGAN

M



M

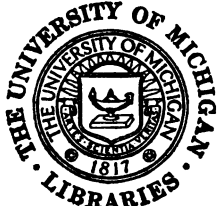


M



THE UNIV

M



M



M



MICHIGAN

M



M



LIBRARY

LIBRARY



A

**FINNISH GRAMMAR**

*ELIOT*

*London*  
HENRY FROWDE



OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS WAREHOUSE  
AMEN CORNER, E.C.

A

# FINNISH GRAMMAR

BY

NOTE TO THE READER

The paper in this volume is brittle or the inner margins are extremely narrow.

We have bound or rebound the volume utilizing the best means possible.

PLEASE HANDLE WITH CARE

ORD

Oxford

AT THE CLARENDON PRESS

1890

[All rights reserved]



2

1

2 (1874) 11. 11

London  
HENRY FROWDE

---

A

FINNISH GRAMMAR

BY

*has*  
C. N. E. ELIOT, M.A.

FELLOW OF TRINITY COLLEGE, OXFORD

Oxford

AT THE CLARENDON PRESS

1890

[*All rights reserved*]

894.5

E42

Oxford

PRINTED AT THE CLARENDON PRESS

BY HORACE HART, PRINTER TO THE UNIVERSITY

## PREFACE.



My object in writing this book has been to give an account of Finnish sufficient to enable any one to understand the grammatical structure of the written language, and also to place before the student of philology an account of the chief phenomena it presents. In this latter respect I am conscious that my treatment is very inadequate on account of my inability to make myself acquainted with the many dialects spoken by the peasantry in various parts, the importance of which for the scientific history of the language cannot be overrated. I trust, however, that I may meet with indulgence, as the present work is, to the best of my belief, the only grammar of Finnish in English, and the only syntax (except brief sketches) in any language more generally accessible than Swedish.

The Finnish language is still in so unsettled and fluid a condition, as regards both forms and style, that it is often hard to say what is correct and what not. A foreigner naturally cannot venture to decide what ought or ought not to be, and I have merely endeavoured to give an account of the forms and constructions found in existence. The examples are taken chiefly from the Kalevala and Bible (which are generally cited by references), from the Suomen Kansan

Sananlaskuja of Ahlqwist, from various modern works, and some from the dictionaries of Lönnrot and Geitlin. The remainder have all been approved by natives, and will, hence, I trust, be found idiomatic.

I must acknowledge my obligations to the grammars of Genetz and Hämäläinen, to the Finska Språkets Satslära of Jahnsson, and especially to the excellent Suomen Kielen Lauseoppi of Setälä.

But more than to all of these I am indebted to the constant assistance and collaboration of my friend Mr. Putro of the Finnish School in St. Petersburg, to whose thorough knowledge of the language this work owes whatever accuracy it may possess. I have also to thank Mr. J. Marshall for several philological suggestions.

C. N. E. ELIOT.

*March 20, 1890.*

HÄNEN KUNINKAALLISEN MAJESTETINSA  
LÄHETILÄÄLLE PIETARISSA  
HÄNEN YLHÄISYDELLENSÄ SIR R. MORIERILLE  
KUNNIOITUKSELLA  
OMISTAA  
TEKIJÄ



## INTRODUCTION.

---

IN this book I have endeavoured to give a simple and clear account of the Finnish language, chiefly of that form of it which is now recognised as the ordinary vehicle of literary composition, and have thought it better to set aside as far as possible scientific disquisitions. I now proceed to briefly discuss from a purely theoretical point of view some of the phenomena presented by this curious tongue, in doing which I must express my special obligations to the various works of Professors Donner and Setälä, and also to the account of *Die Sprachen der Uralischen Völker* in the second volume of Dr. Friedrich Müller's *Grundriss der Sprachwissenschaft*.

The phonetic system of Finnish is characterized by a great paucity of consonants and a correspondingly great development of vowels. The alphabet has but thirteen of the former: d, g, h, j, k, l, m, n, p, r, s, t, v. Of these it must be observed that d is in modern times only a literary invention, though as it exists in Esthonian and other cognate languages there is no reason to object to its use. It always represents a t which has been weakened by phonetic laws, but in the mouths of the peasantry the sound is either entirely omitted, or else replaced by a cerebral letter (represented in writing by l or r) or by v or j. G also is only found in the combination ng, which has



exactly the same sound as in English. The letter *h* is apparently never original in the middle of words. It appears to me to have really two sounds—as an initial or between vowels, it is simply the English *h*, but before *t* and *k*, it is *χ*. The other consonants offer no remarkable peculiarities; *v* appears to be pronounced as in English (labio-dental), and not to be a labio-labial (modern Greek *β*).

The simple consonants are pronounced much more lightly than in English. *T* and *k* in the middle of a word when pronounced naturally by a native, who is not trying to speak distinctly to a foreigner, often seem almost inaudible, and it is noticeable that in foreign words, with which the language is overrun, German and Swedish *k*, *t*, *p* (when not initial) are always represented by *kk*, *tt*, *pp*. It is highly probable that Finnish (like Esthonian) once had the sounds *b*, *d*, *g*. In Agricola are found such forms as *näghe* for *näe*, *virdhat* for *virrat*. On the other hand, everything points to the fact that the original tongue from which the Finno-Ugric languages were developed had only ten or eleven consonants: *k*, *t*, *p*, *s*, *j*, *r*, *l*, *n*, *m*, *v*, and perhaps *h* or *χ*. For the many curious sounds found in Lapp, Syrjénian, Ostiak, etc., all look as if they were degenerations from a simpler original.

Finnish has eight simple vowels: *a*, *ä*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *ö*, *u*, *y* (*ü*). All of these can be either short, or long, and in the latter case the letter is written double. These doubled letters appear to be genuine long vowels, and to contain no diphthongal element. There are no triphthongs, but sixteen diphthongs, though on the whole Finnish has more simple vowels than other languages of the same group, particularly Lappish.

Though no difference is made in writing between the different

values of the vowel *i*, it appears that there really is a distinction between its value in words like *otti*, or *oli*, where the vowels are hard, and in words like *näki* where they are soft. The hard sound comes very near the Russian *ы* and the Turkish *i* in such a word as *اچملوایدنیز* *achmalıyidiniz*.

The vocalization of words is governed by three laws. The first is well known under the name of vowel harmony. The essence of this is that the hard (*a, o, u*) and soft (*ä, ö, y*) vowels cannot coexist in the same word. Not only the Finno-Ugric languages, but also Samoyede, Turkish, Mongolian, and Manchu, have this law at least in the rudimentary form that a root does not contain both hard and soft vowels; but there is much variety as to the degree in which the vowels of the suffixes are assimilated to those of the root to which they are added. The most highly developed form of the law is found in the Turkish dialects (particularly in Yakut), where the vowels of the root and suffix must not only not be discordant, but are as much as possible assimilated to one another. Thus *پدرینیز* is pronounced *pederiniz*, *your father*, but *دوستکیز* *dostunuz*, *your friend*. The same principle appears to prevail in Samoyede, from which are cited such forms as *marg-an*, *tob-on*, *üg-ün*, *tšel-en*. The other extreme, where the harmony prevails only between the vowels of the root but not between those of the root and the suffixes, is found in nearly all the Finno-Ugric languages except Finnish and Hungarian. In some languages (e. g. Mordvinian) the harmony is not rigorously observed even in the root. It is doubtful if such languages really represent a more primitive phonetic system than Finnish. They may have become affected owing to Russian influence by an inability to accurately distinguish the hard and soft vowels, particularly *a* and *ä*, for, though it is very

probable that originally the vowel of the suffix was not necessarily the same as that of the root, one would expect those languages which retain the primitive system to distinguish the suffix more clearly than the others from the root, which does not seem to be the case. Finnish in this respect holds a midway position. The vowels of the suffixes are not assimilated, as in Turkish, but they are always of the same quality as those of the root. The suffix *s—n* or *h—n*, however, found in the illative and passive, seems to show an approach to the Turkish system, as its vowel is always the same as that which precedes it: *kotihin*, *työhön*, *töihin*, *kylähän*, *talohon*, *saa(d)ahan*, *saatihin*, *saatanehen*, *saataisiin*.

The second vocalic law of Finnish is the exact opposite of the vowel harmony—viz. vowel differentiation. The occurrence of incongruous vowels in one word is discordant, but the excessive repetition of the same vowel is disagreeably monotonous. To avoid this *a* is often changed into *o* in words where *a* is the dominant vowel (pp. 9, 10 for the details), *patoja* for *pataja*, *annoin* for *annain*; but *otin*, *sotia* for *ota-in*, *sota-ia*. So also in the Eastern dialect *kaloa* for *kalaa*. On the same principle *a* and *ä* change to *e* in comparatives and passives, and thus we have *vanhempana* and *tapetaan* instead of such monotonous forms as *vanhampana* and *tapataan*. Also two *i*'s meeting generally become *ei*.

The third rule relates to the disappearance of final or medial *e*, and the consequent shortening of words. The chief accent of Finnish, as now pronounced, is on the first syllable of a word, and it is therefore very natural that final vowels should be omitted. In the dialect spoken about S. Petersburg this phenomenon is very frequent and such forms as *miss* for *missä*,

**yks, kaks** for **yksi** and **kaksi** are common in the mouths of the peasantry. This may, however, be due to the influence of Esthonian and Russian. In correct Finnish final **e** is omitted only in the nominative singular of polysyllabic stems, the consonantal groups which remain being simplified if the laws of euphony require it: so **sisare, tantere, kysymykse** become **sisar, tanner, and kysymys**. In the middle of words the final **e** of a stem disappears before nominal suffixes beginning with **t** (and sometimes **n**) and before verbal suffixes beginning with **k** or **n**, and this rule applies to dissyllables also. Now one would suppose on *a priori* grounds that the invariable accent on the first syllable is not original, but has replaced some older and less simple system, just as the variable accentuation of Russian is older than the stereotyped system of Polish. Even in modern Finnish I doubt if the rule that every word is accented on the first syllable is really true. An educated Finn will always maintain that in a word like **revitään** the main accent is on the first syllable, but to my ear it appears to be distinctly on the last (**-tään**), indeed, it is hard to see how this long syllable could be pronounced without an accent. What is undoubtedly true is that no syllables are slurred over as in Russian and English. There is, as far as I know, no historical proof that some of the suffixes were accented in Finnish; but it is highly probable on general grounds and explains many phenomena presented by both vowel and consonantal changes. For instance, the termination of the first infinitive, **ta** (representing an original **tak** or **takse**), when added to the stem **tule**, produces **tulla**, which is quite natural if the original form was **tuletá**, as the light vowel would drop out before the accented syllable; similarly **syöksenen** becomes **syösenen** for **syöksnen**. Sometimes a whole

syllable is omitted, e. g. *alenetá* becomes *aleta*. For some reason the *e* is generally not omitted if it is preceded by *k*, *p*, *v*, or *m*. This is not an absolute rule, as one finds forms like *tointa* (st. *toime*), *nähdä*, *tehdä* (st. *nähe*, *teke*), but it is hard to see why if *tule-tá* becomes *tulla*, *luketá* should not become *luhda*. The length of the first vowel has nothing to do with the matter, as *nouse* makes *nousta*. *A* and *ä* occasionally disappear in much the same way. Thus *vieras* stands for *vierasa*, *löynnyt*, *tiennyt* are formed from *löytá*, *tietá*; and superlatives regularly lose final *a*; *suurin*, for *suurimpa*.

The rules for the changes of consonants fall into three main groups. Firstly only *n*, *r*, *s*, or *t* are admitted as finals and only a few simple combinations occur in the middle of words. When the loss of a vowel produces groups which are euphonicly disagreeable, they are simplified; *veitstä*, *kolmant*, *suurimp*, *säkenöitstä* become *veistä*, *kolmas*, *suurin*, *säkenöitä*.

The second group of changes concerns the letters *t*, *k*, *s*, *h*. The group *ti* has always a tendency to become *si* in syllables which never had the accent. The letter *h*, which is suspected of never being original when a medial, represents *t*, *k*, and *s*. *S* between two vowels immediately before a termination always becomes *h*. *Vierasa* makes in the nominative *vieras*, *a* being lost owing to the accent being on the first syllable. But the genitive *vierasan* becomes *vierahan*, and in the ordinary language this is contracted to *vieraan*. So too *t* becomes *h* under similar circumstances, perhaps having passed through *s*. The nominatives *kevät*, *terve*, and *vene* appear to represent stems *kevätä*, *tervete*, and *venete* (for the partitives are *kevättä*, *tervettä*, *venettä*) and form the genitives *kevähän*, *venehen*, *tervehen*. The same change appears in the de-

clension of past participles ending in *-nyt* or *-nut*. Again, *kt* before a termination which was presumably once accented becomes *ht*—a combination of which the language is very fond. Thus the roots, *haakte*, *ykte*, *kakte* produce such forms as *haahden*, *yhtä*, *kahtena*, in all of which the first syllable was probably not accented. But in the nominative the first syllable was accented and the words became first *haakti*, *ykti*, *kakti* (rule 15), and then *haaksi*, *yksi*, *kaksi* (rule 37).

The third rule is the most important and singular. It requires the softening in some way of the three hard consonants *k*, *t*, *p*, when they occur at the beginning of a short open syllable which becomes closed. It is stated in detail on pp. 13, 14, 15. These conventional rules are of great practical utility, for they are of almost universal application and can be used with perfect certainty in building up the most complicated forms. On the other hand, if one tries to explain them, they remain unique and mysterious, if considered only in reference to the closed syllable. Now there is one exception to their action: the addition of the pronominal suffixes produces no change in the consonants of a noun. But there are a good many cases where consonants are softened without the syllable being closed. Some of these cases (e. g. infinitives and negative verbs) are justly treated as closed syllables because a final consonant has been lost. But (1) we find forms like *auringoita*, *palkinnoita* from *aurinko*, *palkinto*; (2) many forms seem to waver between *p* and *v*, e. g. *pi* or *vi* in the 3rd sing. of verbs; *pa* or *va* in the participle.

In Esthonian, where an almost identical rule is found, it is obvious that in the present state of the language at any rate the theory of the closed syllable does not apply at all.

It has been already seen that, though there is no actual proof that terminations in Finnish received the accent, the supposition that they once did so is not only agreeable to analogy, but explains many phenomena in the phonetics of the language. On this principle the rule about the closed syllable might be restated in the form that when a syllable received the accent, owing to the addition of a suffix <sup>1</sup>, the consonant at the beginning of that syllable was weakened. Thus *aúrinko* remains with *nk*, *aurinkón* becomes *auringon*, but *aurinkoná* remains. The pronominal suffixes produce no change, because they are merely enclitic pronouns and have no accent. *Auringoita* can be easily explained by the tendency to accent a syllable containing a formative element and a diphthong. The advantage of this explanation of the weakening as due to change of accent is that, if true, it enables us to compare the phenomena presented by Finnish with laws accepted as prevailing in other languages, particularly with what is known in Teutonic philology as Werner's law affecting non-initial soft spirants. By this law when *χ*, *þ*, *ʃ*, *s* close the syllable bearing the chief accent they remain; in all other cases they pass into the corresponding sonants *g*, *ǰ*, *ʒ*, *z*. Thus an original *wórþe* produces *warþ*, but an original *(we)wurþmé* produces *wurǰúm*.

All Finnish accidentence is concerned with the addition of suffixes to roots, subject to the above rules for the change of vowels and consonants. In the present state of the language these roots are mostly dissyllabic, though there are also plenty of monosyllables. There is reason to believe, however, that these dissyllabic roots are mostly the result of the combination of a monosyllable with

<sup>1</sup> This applies not only to case or personal suffixes, but to any formative element.

very primitive suffixes, and it is probable that the original roots were of the form consonant + the vowel *a* + consonant. The root was differentiated in various ways by changing *a* to *o*, *u*, *i*, *e*, etc., by raising it to a diphthong or long vowel, or by altering the consonants within certain limits. Examples of this development of roots are contained in Donner's *Vergleichendes Wörterbuch der Finno-Ugrischen Sprachen*.

Finnish, like all the cognate languages, has no distinctions of gender. It possesses two numbers, the singular and plural, all traces of the dual which exists in Ostiak and Vogul having been lost. Three elements are used to form the plural—*t*, *i*, and *loi*. Of these *t* is found only in the nominative and genitive plural, in which latter case it appears variously as *tt*, *d*, or, like the *t* of the partitive and infinitive, is omitted. This suffix appears also in Esthonian (as *d*), Mordvinian, and Ostiak (*tl*). Vogul, Syrjenian, and Cheremissian have quite different suffixes, while Lappish and Hungarian employ the letter *k*, apparently identical with the *g* which characterises the dual in Ostiak and Vogul. It has been suggested that as *k* cannot be a final in Finnish, it has been changed to *t*; but Mordvinian, which has no objection to final *k*, also has *t* as a plural sign. The vowel *i* is used in all the cases except the nominative and genitive to mark the plural, being inserted immediately before the case termination. It is similarly used in Esthonian and Lappish, and there are traces of it in Hungarian. It has been explained as representing *k* weakened to *j*. In the Kalevala and many dialects (e. g. that of Savo) a suffix *loi* is found before the plural termination, chiefly in the partitive, essive, and translative: *mahti-loi-ta*, *pilvi-löi-ksi*, *tähti-löi-nä*. It is never found in the nominative, nor, for euphonic reasons, in the cases which otherwise contain



1. The *i* is evidently the ordinary plural sign, and as *pata + i + na* becomes *patoina*, it is probable that this *loi* represents *la + i*. Ostiak has a suffix *tl* in the plural (but this appears to represent simple *t*), Cheremissian adds *vija* or *vila*, and in Samoyede *la* appears to be used indifferently with *t* as a plural sign. The syllable *la* is used in Finnish to denote a place: e. g. *setälä*, *uncle's house*, from *setä*, and *lo* is a diminutive termination. Possibly these forms should be treated as diminutives, but the analogy with Samoyede is curious. It is noticeable that according to our ideas the plural is not used very strictly; thus the numerals take a singular noun, the partitive when signifying many people likewise takes a singular verb; the verb *on* is used with the nominative plural, and in poems, proverbs, etc., a plural noun has as often as not a singular verb. On the other hand, the plural is often used where there seems to be no real idea of plurality. For instance, we find expressions like *olla kylmillä*, *to be in the cold*; *omin luvin*, *of one's own accord*. The instructive, prolativ, and comitative are generally used in the plural, even when one definite person is described, and there is no distinction between the singular and plural suffixes for the third person. Now, in some languages which appear to present the least developed type of the agglutinative principle, as for instance Manchu, the plural is not regularly distinguished from the singular, and though Finnish has advanced enormously beyond this stage, it appears to have developed a less acute sense of number than the Aryan languages. It is therefore very possible that some of the plural suffixes were in their origin not strictly plural. The *t* might thus be identical with that of the determinate accusative of pronouns (*minut*, etc.) and with the *t* or *te*, which

characterises the definite declension in Mordvinian. Possibly the **k** of the other languages of the group may be connected with the suffixes **-kko**, **-kkaha**, which have an idea of quantity.

Nearly all the cases had originally a local meaning. On pp. 131-133 will be found some account of their relation to one another, and the development of their significations. As is there shown, there are three groups of cases which more or less correspond, the so-called interior and exterior groups, and another composed of the partitive, the essive, and the translative. These latter have simple suffixes, **ta**, **na**, and **ksi**. In the other groups another element is added to the suffix, in the interior cases **s** (supposed to represent **sisä**), and in the exterior **l** (supposed to represent **luo**). The terminations of the inessive (**ssa**), the elative (**sta**), the adessive (**lla**), and the ablative (**lta**) clearly stand for **s+na**, **s+ta**, **l+na**, **l+ta**. The combination **n+ta** is also used sporadically (p. 23) to form a case analogous to the elative and ablative. The relation of the three cases indicative of motion to **is**, however, less obvious. The termination of the translative is **ksi** (or **kse**), that of the illative **sen** or **h-n** (with the vowel of the previous syllable between the two consonants), and that of the allative **-lle**, sometimes pronounced **llen**. Now, Finnish contains clear traces of a dative in **-ne** or **-nek** (pp. 24 and 128). The illative shows a suffix **-sen**, but dialects give forms which represent **he-sen** or **se-sen** (which are supported by the analogy of other languages), which may be explained as the characteristic of the internal cases plus a case termination. The allative **-lle(n)** may therefore be explained as **l+h-en**, though it can equally well represent **l+ne**. The termination **sen**, which is weakened to **h-n**, or merely **n** preceded by a long vowel, is perhaps for **ksen**, for the termina-

tion of the translative has a great tendency to be weakened and even disappear (*alas, ulos, taa, ty'ö*, 1st infinitives, etc.). We thus get three groups exactly corresponding: (1) *na, ta, kse*; (2) *s + na, s + ta, s + ksen*; (3) *l + na, l + ta, l + kse*.

The prolative, ending in *-tæ*, is not often used and is perhaps identical with the termination *-ten*, found in some adverbs (*täten, miten, siten*, etc.). The caritive has regularly the termination *-tta*, but in adverbs this sinks to *-ti* (*ääneti, huoleti*). Dialectically are found *tak, tah, and ta*, and a comparison of the cognate languages leaves no doubt that *taka* or *ta $\chi$ a* was the original form. It is quite clear that this ending is closely connected with the caritive adjectival suffix *-toma*, which has much the same form in all the cognate languages, except Ostiak, where it is wanting. In Mordvinian we have *vtomo* or *ftäma*, and in Lappish *täbme* or *töbme*. Otherwise the suffix seems to represent an original *tama*. Perhaps the *f* or *v* of Mordvinian may represent some element (e. g. *k*) added to the stem before the suffix, which has produced in Finnish *tt*. The termination of the abessive has been explained as the word *taka, back*. But if this is so, what becomes of the caritive adjective, which shows no trace of this syllable *ka*? The conclusion that the element denoting absence or negation is *ta*—perhaps with some other consonant before it—seems inevitable. *Ta* is used to denote motion from (the original meaning of the partitive), and the connection between this idea and absence is not impossible.

There remain several cases characterised by the letter *n*, with or without a vowel. We have (1) a genitive, with the termination *n* in the singular, and taking *t* as well in the plural; (2) an accusative, found only in the singular and identical in form

with the genitive; (3) an instructive identical in the singular with the genitive, but without the element *t* in the plural; (4) a comitative, formed with the syllable *ne*. This last may be explained as a local case, related to the syllable *na* of the essive or locative as the *ta* of the 1st infinitive is to the *te* of the second. The instructive termination is probably in reality the same as that of the genitive. It does not seem unnatural that a case denoting relation should be used adverbially to denote the manner in which an action is performed. The case is used chiefly in the plural, in which it does not take the element *t*, doubtless to distinguish it from the genitive. The genitive seems either to have or to have had the termination *n* in all the Finno-Ugric languages. It is noticeable that it is strictly a case representing relation, and does not denote origin. Its regular place is before the word which depends on it. It is probably akin to the dative ending in *-ne*. The accusative ending in *n* plays only a very small part in Finnish, as it is never used except to denote the total object in the singular of a finite verb. The partial object (p. 126) is always in the partitive, whether singular or plural; the total object plural is in the nominative, and the total object singular of an imperative or impersonal (so-called passive) verb is also in the nominative. Usage with regard to the object of an infinitive is fluctuating, but the primitive rule seems to be that it was in the partitive or nominative. It would seem that when the agent is not defined (imperative, passive, infinitive) the simple nominative was regarded as sufficient, as there could be no confusion between the subject and object. But when the subject is expressed by a word or termination, it was felt necessary to emphasise the object by some termination. *T* in the plural was apparently

enough, but in the singular we find *n*, which might be identified with the suffix of the genitive, but for the fact that Ostiak, Cheremissian, and Vogul have *m* or *me*, and Lappish *m*, *b*, *p*, or *w* pointing to an original *m*.

There is also a termination *t* occurring in the accusatives of the personal pronouns in Finnish, and found also in Hungarian, Mordvinian, and Syrjenian, which marks the determinate accusative. This is perhaps identical with the *t* of the plural. The nominative, as such, has no termination. In the plural it has the simple plural sign *t*; in the singular it is identical with the root, unless altered (as is often the case) by purely phonetic laws.

The Finnish adjective is not distinguished from the noun, but it presents this peculiarity that contrary to the usage of the cognate languages it agrees with its substantive in number and case. This is probably due to Aryan influences, and has on the whole been a misfortune, for as soon as it is possible to construct sentences in which the connection of adjectives and substantives, far removed from one another in place, can be indicated by similar terminations, it is inevitable that authors should construct complicated phrases of the German or Greek type, which so much disfigure contemporary Finnish literature.

Finnish possesses a comparative and superlative, both having the termination *mpa*, the comparative being distinguished by the addition of the letter *i* before this suffix. This *i* might possibly be identified with that which marks the oblique cases of the plural, on the supposition that it is a determinative element which gradually acquired a plural signification in nouns. The comparative ending is also found in the pronouns.

jompi, kumpi, and molempi. Though the present numerals of the Finno-Ugric languages are based on a decimal system, it is clear that the original base was seven. For in all the languages the numbers from one to seven are obviously identical, whereas the words for eight, nine, ten are different. Finnish, with the Baltic dialects, and Mordvinian, represent ten by *kymmenen*, *kümme*, or *kemen*; Lappish, Cheremissian, and Vogulian give *lokke* (or *loye*), *lu*, *lau*, which signify simply *number* (Finn. *luku*). Ostiak has *jon*, which recalls the Turkish *on* and Yakut *uon*, but which has also been explained as *ljon* (= *luku*). Cheremissian has *das*, which looks as if it had been borrowed from the Russian *десять*, though this explanation can hardly be extended to the Magyar *tíz*. The numbers eight and nine clearly contain in most of the languages the numbers two and one, so that they must mean ten minus two, and ten minus one, but the element denoting ten is not clear: Finnish, *kahdeksan*, *yhdeksän*; Lappish, *kaktse*, *aktse* (*kuekte*, *two*; *akte*, *one*); Syrjenian *kökja-mis*, *ök-mis* (*kik*, *two*; *ötik*, *one*); Mordvinian, *kafksa*, *vehksa* (*kafta*, *two*; *ifkä*, *one*); Cheremissian, *kändexsje*, *indexsje* (*kok*, *two*; *ik-tä*, *one*). The Magyar, Ostiak, and Vogul for eight (*nyole*, *nji-gedlax*, *njälä-lu*) seems related, but not the words for nine. The word for a hundred is the same in all the languages.

The personal pronouns are declined almost exactly like nouns. *Minä*, *sinä*, *hän* appear to represent original forms *mi-nä*, *ti-nä*, *sä-nä* (? for *tä-nä*). The oblique cases in the singular of the 1st and 2nd person are formed either from the stems *minu* and *sinu* (which have been adopted by the literary language), or *mu*, *su*. The plural stems are *me*, *te*, *he*, apparently strengthened forms of *mi*, *ti*, *hi*, which take *i* in the oblique

cases, but which (like the demonstrative pronouns) do not take *t* in the nominative.

The genitive of the personal pronominal is supplied by the pronominal affixes, which are added to nouns. They are for the singular *ni*, *si*, *nsa*; for the plural *mme*, *nne*, *nsa*. The 1st person singular *ni* is difficult to explain, for the pronominal root is *mi*. Probably final *m* was changed to *n* (cf. the verbs), and the *i* was a later addition. So too the 2nd person singular varies between *si* and *s*. It is clear that in the 3rd singular and all the persons of the plural an element, perhaps the *n* of the genitive, is added to the noun, so that *nsa*, *mme*, *nne* stand for *n-sa*, *n-me*, *n-te*. It is noticeable, however, that in Ostiak and Vogul the 2nd person is distinguished by the element *n*, and not *t*, in all three numbers: sing. *nen*, *nän*; plur. *nen*, *nan*; dual *nin*. These suffixes are added to the declined noun, after the case termination, whereas in Hungarian the case terminations are added after the pronominal affix. In Cheremissian either combination seems possible. It is a remarkable fact that when the pronominal affixes cause a syllable to be closed, the initial consonant of that syllable is not weakened as in other cases. *Tapa* + *mme* and *tapa* + *nsa* do not become *tavamme*, *tavansa*, but *tapamme*, *tapansa*. The explanation of this is very easy if the principles suggested above are correct. The pronominal affixes are enclitics, and hence *tápa-nsa* does not change its accent, while *tapa-lla* becomes *tavá-lla*. But what is much more curious is that while the simple genitive singular and nominative plural are *tavan* and *tavat*, the same cases with suffixes appear as *tapamme* or *tapansa*. If these forms are not due to analogy they must be explained on a principle which seems to prevail in

Finnish, that it is unnecessary to add more than one suffix defining the relations of words, unless there is a question of local position. Thus in the plural the sign of number is considered a sufficient mark both of the nominative and accusative.

The other pronouns call for little comment, but it is noticeable that the relative pronouns and adverbs are fully developed, so that, although many phrases which we should render by temporal and relative clauses are expressed by infinitives and participles (as in Turkish), they can also be expressed by sentences like those of Aryan languages. All the Finno-Ugric languages show an attempt to differentiate the verb from the noun, which is least successful in the Eastern languages, and most fully realized in Finnish. Yet here one can at once discard a mass of forms—the so-called infinitives and participles—which are simple substantives. Their use is explained on pp. 184–202. The infinitives are formed with two suffixes, *ta* and *ma*. The first appears in the 1st infinitive as *ta*, *da*, or *a*, and in the 2nd infinitive, in a weakened form, as *tə*, *də*, or *e*. The second suffix *ma* appears in the 3rd infinitive in its proper form, and as a diminutive in the fourth and fifth infinitives, of which the latter is used only in one case. The present participle, active and passive, is formed by adding *va*, a common adjectival termination, to the simple or to the passive stem. The past participle active is formed by adding *-nehe* (nom. *nut* or *nyt*) to the stem (cf. such nominal stems as *venehe*, *boat*; *puhehe*, *conversation*), while the past participle passive is a simple noun with the suffix *u* or *y*, and identical with such forms as *luku*, *itku*, *maksu* (p. 45), except that it has the *t* which characterises the passive.

Setting aside these forms we have the finite verb, which



shows two distinct formations, indicating two separate modes of thought. The 1st and 2nd persons singular and plural take suffixes obviously identical in origin with the pronominal affixes, while the 3rd person, singular and plural, is a simple predicate. The affixes for the verb are 1st sing. *n*, 2nd sing. *t*, 1st plur. *mme*, 2nd plur. *tte*. In as far as these are not absolutely the same as the suffixes added to nouns, they show an attempt to differentiate the verb, but *n* is clearly the same as *-ni*; *t* is a more original form of the 2nd singular, which was once *ti*, and *mme* is the same in nouns and verbs. The 2nd person plur. in nouns *nne* has been already explained as *n-te*; in the verb *mme* and *tte* perhaps represent *k+me*, *k+te*. Thus it is only in the 1st person plural that the nominal and verbal suffixes absolutely coincide. *Toivomme* means either *we hope* or *our hope*.

The formation of the 3rd persons is quite different. The plural termination is *vat*. In modern Finnish the singular, as a rule, takes no termination, but merely lengthens the final vowel, if not already long or a diphthong. But (as stated on pp. 62 and 63) the termination *pi*, which is found in monosyllabic verbs, and in the weakened form *vi* in others, is frequent in dialects, and used sometimes in the literary language. This suffix appears in all the Baltic dialects in the forms *b*, *p* for the singular, and *vat*, *ba*, *va* for the plural. In Lappish it does not occur in the 3rd person sing. or plur., but in the 1st person plural (*p*, *be*, or *p*), in the 2nd dual (*bätte*, *ppe*, *bet*, *vette*) and plural (*bättet*, *ppet*, *bet*, *vetteð*), and in the 3rd dual (*ba*, *van*, *v*). It also occurs sporadically in Cheremissian as the sign of the 3rd person. Now it is quite plain that the Finnish *-va-t* is the plural form of *pi* or *vi*. An analogy for

final **a** sinking to **i** can be found in the nominative and comparatives (**suurempi** for **suurempa**), and it is therefore likely that the 3rd person singular and plural ended in **pa** and **vat** (p. 15). No doubt this **pa** or **va** is identical with the suffix of the present participle. In the plural indeed the two forms are absolutely identical even in the modern language: **tuovat**, **antavat**, **tulevat** are either the 3rd person plural present or nominative plural of the participle present. The 3rd person is thus simply a predicate, the verb substantive being, as often, omitted. **Pa** or **va** would thus be in its origin a suffix of the present: **pi** or **vi** does not appear in any of the other moods or tenses, but **vat** is the universal termination of the plural. Perhaps it was not original in any tense but the present, as Setälä quotes from old writers and dialects such forms as **sanoit** (**sanoivat**), **näghitt** (**näktivät**), **olisit** (**olisivat**), etc. But it must be remembered that the termination **va** has not a marked temporal signification, as it is used to form simple adjectives like **lihava**, *fat*; **terävä**, *sharp*. If then we regard **saavat** as a simple adjective from the root **saa**, denoting *taking*, there is no reason why **saivat**, **saanevat**, etc. should not be adjectives from **sai**, **saane**, which express modifications of that root. But this is a question of chronology, and it is more probable that when those stems were formed **vat** was accepted as a suffix of the 3rd plural. In Esthonian the **va** is sometimes added to the active past participle (**tulnuva**), and similar forms are quoted from Agricola. In modern Finnish the 3rd person singular generally ends simply in a long vowel, perhaps the remains of a diphthong ending in **u**, which occurs in some dialects.

Besides the personal terminations already discussed, we find in reflexive verbs (in some of which however the reflexive mean-

ing is not very clear) *me* as the suffix of the 1st singular (*annoime, luome, siirime*<sup>1</sup>), *te* for the 2nd person (*weäite, seisotaite, tungeite*), *ksen, kse, ihe* for the 3rd person. These latter forms are carefully discussed by Setälä (Suom. Ug. Seuran Aikakauskirja, No. II, 1887, p. 33 ff.), and he seems to prove satisfactorily that they represent *k + sen*, of which the first element is a present suffix, found also in the imperative and negative, and the second the pronoun of the 3rd person, found also in the optative, passive, and other forms. The terminations *me* and *te* might be explained as the original forms, seeing that the roots of the 1st and 2nd personal pronouns are probably *mi* and *ti*, but they are more likely to be due to false analogy, the real meaning of *he (=sen)* in the 3rd person having been forgotten.

We have thus for terminations indicative of person the following:—

Sing.	Plur.
1. <i>n (me)</i>	<i>m + me</i>
2. <i>t (te)</i>	<i>t + te</i>
3. (a) <i>pi, vi, long vowel</i>	<i>vat</i> or simple <i>t</i> .
(b) <i>sen, hen, se, he.</i>	

We have now to consider what are the other formative elements used in the Finnish verb, in doing which it is best to take first the finite affirmative conjugation, leaving aside the negative and passive forms. We may also leave aside the compound tenses which have doubtless arisen under foreign influences (cf. the Magyar forms).

We have seen that in nouns the possessive affixes *n-sa, m-me, n-ne* pointed to the fact that another element besides the strictly

<sup>1</sup> Kalevala. 3 painos. 1887. Johdanto. p. xv.

pronominal affix was added to the stem. The *mme* and *tte* of the plural verb are also best explained as *k+me*, *k+te*. This *k* occurs in many other verbal forms, and is of rather uncertain meaning, but apparently originally used in the present tense. It occurs in most of the cognate languages, particularly Lappish. The moods and tenses of the Finnish verb are very simple. The indicative has but two simple tenses (as in most of the cognate languages), a durative, which answers to both our present and future, and an aorist. There are three other moods, the potential or concessive, which represents an action as possible but not actual, the conditional, and the imperative, with which the optative may be taken to form one tense.

The present indicative adds the personal endings direct to the stem ; the other forms add some element between the stem and terminations, which are the same as in the present (*n*, *t*, *mme*, *tte*, *vat*), except that the 3rd singular never takes *pi* or *vi*.

The past tense (generally called imperfect) is formed by adding the vowel *i* to the stem, which generally causes euphonic changes. *Saa*, to receive ; *sain*, I received ; *anta*, to give ; *annoin*, I gave ; *tule*, to come ; *tulin*, I came. This suffix *i* is used in Lappish in the forms *je*, *ie*, *i*, and traces of it occur in Magyar, Mordvinian, Cheremissian, Syrjenian, and Vogul. Ostiak is peculiar in using the simple stem for the past, and adding *de* to mark the present. The suffix *i* or *je* is perhaps the same as *ja* used to form nouns expressing the agent (e.g. *kalastaja*, a fisherman). Another termination used extensively in all the Baltic dialects is *-si*. This is quite regular in verbs whose root ends in *ta*, for *lupat(a)i* becomes naturally *lupasi*, and *pyyt(ä)i* *pyysi* (*v. p.* 16 for detailed

rules). But in Esthonian and the South Western dialect of Finnish this termination is added to a great many words which have no *t* in the stem. E. g. Esthonian : stem *palu*, pres. *palun*, pret. *palusin* ; stem *pühki*, pres. *pühin*, pret. *pühkizin*. These forms are perhaps the result of analogy, which was particularly easy on account of the contracted verbs. A comparison of the present *lupaan* (from which *t* has been lost) and the imperfect *lupasin* naturally suggests that *si* is the characteristic suffix of the latter. On the other hand, Mordvinian, Cheremissian, Vogul, and some forms of Ostiak (as well as the Samoyede languages) all have *s* or *š* as a sign of the preterite, so that *si* may possibly contain another tense element distinct from *i*.

The concessive is characterised by the syllable *ne*, or sometimes *no* in dialects. A conjunctive formed with this element occurs in most of Baltic dialects, Cheremissian, Vogul, and Ostiak.

The conditional has in Finnish a double suffix *i+si*. The *i* is doubtless identical with that of the imperfect. The syllable *si* is no doubt for *ksi*, for the Esthonian conditional is regularly formed with this suffix. *Palu, wiska, pühki, sō* form *paluksin, wiskaksin, pühiksin, sōksin*. Esthonian generally has this suffix without *i*, but the other Baltic dialects employ the Finnish form. Lappish also has a subjunctive showing the syllable *kēi, öēi, or ēi*, but the form is unknown in the Eastern languages. It is noticeable that both *ne* and *se* are found in dialects doubled (*myysisin* from *myy*, *to sell* ; *tullenen*, for *tulnenen*, from *tulla*, *to come*), and also combined in the form *neisi*, which occurs several times in the Kalevala (e. g. xxiii. 219, 220. *Tuosta sulho suuttuneisi Mies nuori nuristuneisi*).

The imperative consists of a 2nd person singular, which in literary Finnish is merely the root in a closed form (*anna*, *ota* from *anta*, *otta*), but which in dialects is found ending in *k* (*annak*, *otak*, etc.), and of a 1st and 2nd plural ending in *kaamme*, *kaatte* (or *kaa*) in the literary language, though *kama*, *kamme*, *katte* are also found. A 3rd person singular in *kaan* also occurs, but rarely. The optative consists of a 2nd person singular ending in *os*, of a 3rd person singular in *koon*, and a 3rd person plural in *koot*. These forms have been generally explained as weakenings of suffixes *kasa* (*kaha*) and *koso* (*koho*), and as representing *kasamme*, *kasatte*, *koso*, *koson*, and *kosot*. It appears to me that the evidence brought forward by Setälä (p. 111 ff.) disproves this theory. He points out (1) that the forms *kaha*, *koho* never occur in those dialects which otherwise preserve *h* between vowels, e. g. in the illative and passive; (2) that the Eastern dialects change the *kaa* or *kää* of the imperative into *koa*, *keä*, which change never occurs when an *h* has been lost. Besides no particular explanation has ever been offered of the suffixes *kasa*, *koso*. The proper suffixes then of the imperative and optative are *ka*, *ko*, which are obviously related (cf. *ne*, dialect *no*, in the concessive). These suffixes appear in Esthonian as *gā* (*dial*) and *gu*, and a suffix *ka*, *k*, or traces of it, occurs not only in the Baltic languages, but in all the other members of the group. It seems to be identical with the *k* which appears in the negative conjugation and elsewhere, and which is the least definite in signification of suffixes merely indicating the verbal character of the root. Thus the 2nd person singular of the imperative is an elementary verbal form without a personal termination. The forms *kaamme*, *kaatte* have evidently added to this suffix the

personal termination. The long vowel appears to be an invention of the modern literary dialect. In poetry and dialects we find the forms *kämme*, *käme*, and *käte*.

The termination *os* of the optative is doubtless for *ko + s* where *s* represents the 2nd person singular. In *Kalevala* xxxiii. 257-8 we find a form in *kosi*, *Kun on kuollet kuollosipa*, *kaotkosi kun kaonnet*, cf. *Kanteletar* (p. 14, 2nd ed., 1884) *Tehkös liito lintuseni*. The 3rd person singular ending in *koon* is undoubtedly for *kohon*, where the second element represents the 3rd personal pronoun *hän* or *sen*. The assimilation of the vowel to the *o* of *ko* resembles the phenomena presented by the illative. The plural *koot* is similarly for *kohot*, where the second element represents *het* or *set*, that is the 3rd personal pronoun with the plural suffix. The terminations *kaan* and *kaat*, which occur dialectically, show similar formations with the *ka* of the imperative.

Besides the forms of the finite active verb discussed above, Finnish also possesses what is called a passive, but is no doubt really an impersonal verb, used in all the tenses but the imperative. From the root *tuo* come the present *tuodahan*, imperf. *tuotahin*, concessive *tuotanehen*, conditional *tuotaisihin*. But the root ending in a short vowel like *repi* makes *revitähän*, *revittihin*, *revittänehen*, *revittäisihin*. In all these forms the last element is obviously a termination *h-n*, which is vocalized analogously to the illative. This is probably the 3rd personal pronoun *hän* or *sen*. Besides this termination there is added to the root the element *tta* after a short vowel, and *ta* after a long one. This suffix is probably identical with the causal and transitive terminations *ta*, *tta* (p. 110). Thus the passive forms are really causal verbs used impersonally in the 3rd person singular.

It is noticeable that while the imperfects and other tenses are *tuotihin*, *sanotihim*, etc., the present has *tuodahan*, *sanotahan*, etc. This points to the syllable *tta* or *ta* having being closed originally by some element which has disappeared. Now the passive present in Esthonian is formed regularly with the syllable *kse* which is doubtless the present suffix *k* and the pronoun *se*. Thus the roots *palu*, *wiska*, and *pühki* form the passives *palutakse*, *wizatakse*, *pühitakse* corresponding very closely to an original Finnish *sano + ta + k + sen* which becomes *sanota'hen* and then *sanotaan*. Personal, neuter, or passive verbs are formed by the addition of the vowels *u* or *y*, with or without the addition of *t*, *nt*, or *p* (p. 111). Such verbs, however, are not counted as part of the regular conjugation, as they cannot be formed from all verbal stems.

On the same footing as these reflexive verbs stand the various derivative forms described p. 110 ff. Some of them—e. g. the causal suffixes—have so distinct a meaning and are used so frequently that they might almost be given among the regular forms of the verb; others are only added to comparatively few verbs and vary in their signification. Some of them are the same suffixes which occur in the regular conjugation; *ksi*, a frequentative or diminutive, is no doubt identical with the *si* of the conditional: *ne*, and perhaps the *n* of *nta*, is the suffix of the concessive; *ele*, or *le*, used in Finnish only to form frequentatives and diminutives, appears in Lappish as a sign of the subjunctive mood (Set. p. 158). It is thus clear that the verbal forms consist of a root (that is to say, a form which may be considered as a root for Finnish, without prejudice to the question how far it is absolutely primitive), to which are added certain formative affixes and a termination indicating person. Some



of these formative affixes have been accepted as definitely indicating mood or tense, others have not been so accepted and have a vaguer signification. Thus *anta+i+si+n* is described as the 1st person singular of the conditional of *anta*, *to give*, *isi* being indicative of the mood, but *käärämöittelee*, which represents *käärä+mä+i+tta+ele*, is not regarded as having any modal or temporal suffix.

In Finnish, as in most of the cognate languages except Hungarian and Ostiak (where however there are traces of another system) there is no simple negative particle, and negation can only be expressed by means of the negative verb, *en*, *et*, *ei*, *emme*, *ette*, *eivät*, which is prefixed to the closed form of the root. There is no doubt that this form has lost a final *k*, and is therefore identical with the second person singular of the imperative, and is the simplest verbal form. In the past, the past participle is used with the negative verb, and in the other moods the tense stem. The imperative and optative add *ko* to the stem and the negative particle is formed from the root *äl* or *el* which is obviously closely akin to such forms as *ellen* (p. 69) and perhaps is the negative root combined with the suffix *le*.

Although the common opinion about Finnish is that it is hopelessly unlike any European language, it must be admitted by all who have studied it that it represents a very close approximation to the Aryan type, due no doubt to the strong and consistent foreign influence to which it has been subjected. As is well known, the vocabulary is overrun with German or Scandinavian words, often the equivalents of the simplest ideas, which have been borrowed, not lately, but before the earliest period of which we have any record. In the structure of the

language itself this approximation is not less striking. It manifests itself in two ways—negatively and positively. As for the first, Finnish has abandoned many constructions which are found in the other languages of the group, but which are unknown to Aryan grammar. Thus we find no traces of the object being incorporated with the verb, or of the verb taking possessive as well as predicative suffixes. On the other hand, the positive resemblances are very numerous. It cannot be denied that the declensions, whatever be their origin, are in their present form very similar to those of Latin and Greek. The case suffix forms a whole with the noun; it influences the vowels and consonants of the latter; the pronominal suffixes must be added after it, and not between it and the stem. The only difference between Finnish and Greek or Latin declension is that the former is much more regular and transparent in its character, though, even here, some cases, as the partitive singular and genitive plural, show considerable diversity. The adjective is fully declined, agrees with its substantive, and takes degrees of comparison. The verb is clearly distinguished from the noun, and the scanty supply of primitive tenses has been supplemented by a number of forms combined with the auxiliary verb after the analogy of German or Swedish. There are a great many infinitival and participial constructions, which recall the Turkish; but, on the other hand, the relative pronouns and particles are fully developed. On the whole, it may be fairly said that Finnish really presents no great differences from Aryan languages except in its euphonic laws, the use of the pronominal suffixes, the infinitives and participles, and some syntactical peculiarities. Compared with such a language as Ostiak (or even Magyar) it shows the

clearest traces of foreign influence, and of non-Aryan material recast in a western and Aryan mould.

On the other hand, it must be remembered that agglutinative languages represent a stage through which Aryan languages have doubtless past. The real difference between the forms presented by Finnish, and those of Latin, Greek, or Sanskrit, is that while the former has but a limited number of suffixes, and uses them regularly in the same sense, the latter had a superfluously rich store, and used sometimes one, sometimes another to express the same idea. Hence it is that we find different case endings for nouns, adjectives, and pronouns; and several ways of inflecting verbs and nouns.

The tendency to advance from the primitive forms and constructions of the Ugro-Altaiic languages to a mode of expression more in harmony with western thought reaches its height in the modern literary Finnish. It is no reproach to this language to say that it is artificial. Nearly all modern languages have the same origin. Out of a mass of dialects one is selected by circumstances as representative, and becomes a language while the others remain dialects. A number of such dialects are spoken in Finland, and no doubt if any of them had received an independent literary development, it might have produced a language almost as different from written Finnish as is Esthonian. Neither can one be surprised at the number of newly invented words in Finnish. All the languages of modern Europe have borrowed the vocabulary of mediaeval Latin, either by taking the words as they found them, or by translating the component parts of them into equivalents supplied from their own grammar. English has generally adopted the former, German the latter method. Finnish has followed

boldly in the same track, and endeavoured to find native equivalents for the chief modern ideas. It is perhaps presumptuous for a foreigner to judge whether the result is successful. One is inclined to think that the change has been a little too sudden. Finnish is an admirable vehicle for such poetry as the Kalevala or for simple narrative. It had not advanced at all beyond this state when it was used to represent the most complicated forms of European thought, and, as it still keeps its homely native character, the combination sometimes appears rather odd. Besides, as there is no authority to determine exactly what are the accepted phrases for the literary dialect, or the proper equivalents of foreign words, a good deal of confusion reigns, and even natives have occasionally some difficulty in understanding modern authors. It is a great pity that writers do not adopt a simpler style. As it is, they have chosen German models, and the combination of exceedingly involved phrases with manifold inflectional forms distinguished only by slight differences produces sentences which rival in difficulty ancient Greek, a language which was generally obscure except in the hand of a master. Yet though Finnish deserves its undesirable reputation of being the most difficult language spoken in Europe, except perhaps Basque, it seems to be an undoubted fact that the area over which it is spoken is being enlarged at the expense of Russian and Swedish.

The group of languages to which Finnish belongs is at present spoken by tribes scattered over the more northern parts of European Russia and immediately to the east of the Ural. In Siberia we have Ostiak, spoken by tribes about the river Obi (for the Ostiak of the Yenisei appears to be a different language), and Vogul, spoken by scattered tribes on either side

*of the Ural.* With these languages is connected Magyar, though owing to foreign influences and its great literary development, comparable only to that of Finnish, it presents many peculiarities. Though both the grammar and vocabulary of these languages leave no doubt of their relation to the rest of the group, they differ from them in many points of detail. The case terminations present few resemblances; Vogul and Ostiak have a dual, and they all more or less employ constructions rejected by most of the other languages, such as the incorporation of the object in the verb, the distinction between predicative and possessive suffixes in the verb, etc. Also it is remarkable that they have not developed fully the peculiar negative constructions of Finnish and the more western languages.

East of the Voguls dwell a race called Syryenians or Zyrjenians (Russian Зырянe), whose head quarters are at the town of Ishma, on the Pechora; south of these again are the Votiaks, mostly in the government of Viatka. On the north bank of the Volga, to the west of Kazan, live the Cheremissians, speaking two dialects, some scattered settlements of whom are found further east, while to the south of these again, mostly about the rivers Oka and Sura, are numerous scattered settlements of Mordvinians, who have likewise two dialects. None of these are literary languages. Besides them we have Lappish, in three dialects spoken in the northern parts of Finland, Sweden, and Russia, and the various Baltic idioms, with Suomi or Finnish.

The relation of these languages to one another have been ably described in Dr. Donner's work, 'Die gegenseitige Verwandtschaft der Finnisch-Ugrischen Sprachen.' He divides the whole group into two divisions, the first called Ugric, and com-

prising only Ostiak, Vogul, and Magyar; the second called Finnish, including all the other languages. This second or Finnish division is divided into two groups, the Permian and Volga-Baltic, the former including only the Syrjenians, Permians, and Votiaks, the latter again in two sub-divisions, the Volga group or Mordvinian and Cheremissian, and the West Finnish group including Lappish, Esthonian, and Finnish.

This classification may be represented thus in a table:—

Finno-Ugrian Languages.	A. Ugrian.	1. Ostiak.		
		2. Vogul.		
		3. Magyar.		
	B. Finnish.	i. Permian	{ Syrjenians, Permians, Votiaks.	
ii. Volga Baltic			a. Volga group	{ Cheremissian, Mordvinian.
		b. West Finnish	1. Lappish.	2. Esthonian, Livish, Votish, Vepsish.
			3. Finnish.	

All these languages have a certain common vocabulary, and a common grammatical substratum, though many of them possess constructions unknown to the others. The pronouns, numerals, and in a less obvious degree the pronominal affixes of nouns and verbs are also identical. The Ugrian languages, however, seem to have parted company with the rest before a system of declension had been fixed. Their nominal suffixes seem to be mostly later formations, though we find *t*, *tl*, or *k* for the plural, and traces of *l* as a local element. Corresponding phenomena appear in the conjugation of verbs, as noticed above.

The remaining languages—or Finnish group—have not developed any striking differences from the Ugrian division, but they show greater resemblance to one another in details. They

all have local cases characterised by the letter *s* (unknown in the Ugric group), others characterised by *l*, an abessive ending in *ta* or *tak*, and negative adjectives characterised by the syllable *tem* or *tom*. They mostly agree in having a peculiar form for the negative conjugation. The present of the positive conjugation has *p* (or *v*) regularly or sporadically in certain persons, and the remaining verbal forms, though far from agreeing absolutely, show a sufficient resemblance to warrant us in regarding them as the results of a common development.

From the accounts given of Syrjenian and Votjak it would seem that they were the first to cease to participate in this common development. They appear to be characterised by few striking peculiarities, but to show a less degree of conformity to a common standard than the remaining languages. The phonetic system of Syrjenian seems to be much the same as that of Cheremissian or Mordvinian, except that it has a great fondness for the sound of *i*. The pronouns of both numbers, and the pronominal affixes of the singular, show much more resemblance to the Finnish than to the Ugrian, but the pronominal affixes of the plural (*nim*, *nid*, *nis*) are curious, and obviously represent the singular affixes in combination with a syllable *ni*, which may perhaps be akin to the Finnish plural demonstrative *ne*. In the verb, the 1st person singular has no personal termination. In the plural we find *m*, *nid*, *nis*, as in nouns. Generally Syrjenian seems to be more thoroughly agglutinative, as opposed to inflected, than the Finnish language. In this it may be compared with Cheremissian, where the plural is formed by the syllable *vija* (or *vilä*) added between the stem and case termination, just like *jas* in Syrjenian. The Permian

languages have some close analogies in detail with the Ugrian group. Thus twenty is *kis* in Syrjenian, *kōs* or *χūs* in Ostiak, *huss* in Magyar; the reflexive pronoun is *as* or *ats* in Syrjenian and *Votiak*, *at* in Ostiak.

Of the remaining languages Mordvinian is in many ways the most remarkable. Though generally admitted to be nearly akin to Cheremissian, it has many constructions peculiar to itself. Thus it has a fully developed object conjugation and two forms of declension, the definite and indefinite. It has a great fondness for the letter *f*. On the other hand, such phenomena as the suffix *n-za* for the 3rd person, the word *kemen*, *ten*, the regular formation of the imperfect with *i*, infinitives in *ma*, and participles in *f* (Finn. *va*) show a near approach to Finnish. Cheremissian has also developed some new singular negative forms, by which the verbal root is negated (in the preterite) by a suffix *tə+1*, after which the personal suffixes are added.

The connection of the West Finnish languages is much more striking than that of those which have already been discussed. The resemblance of Lappish to Finnish and Esthonian is a little disguised owing to the elaborate phonetic system of this language, which has an extraordinary fondness for diphthongs, and also a very extensive provision of consonants, including some (e. g. *γ*, *θ*, *δ*) which do not occur in any of the cognate languages. The nominal declension is very similar to that of Finnish. Compare the singular forms *tšalme*, *tšalmen*, *tšalmesn*, *tšalmest*, *tšalmetaka* with *silmä*, *silmänä*, *silmässä*, *silmästä*, *silmättä*. In the singular the genitive and partitive have lost their termination (cf. the Esthonian forms, nom. *silm*, gen. and part. *silma*). The analogy in the plural is still closer; the nominative ends in *h* or *k*, but the other cases are characterised



by the insertion of *i*, *tšalmeh* or *tšalmek*, *tšalmiti*, *tšalmi*, *tšalmin*, *tšalmisne*, *tšalmist*, *tšalmitaya* corresponding to *silmät*, *silmiä*, *silmien*, *silminä*, *silmissä*, *silmistä*, *silmittä*. There are also forms in *i*, *le*, *lt*, or *ld*. The partitive case appears to be peculiar to the West Finnish languages. The pronouns of Lappish point the other way, and are all but identical with those of Mordvinian, *mon*, *ton* or *don*, *son*, *mi*, *ti* or *di*, *si*; Mordvinian *mon*, *son*, *ton*, *min*, *sin*, *tin*. The singular affixes are *m*, *d*, *s* (Mordv. *n*, *t*, *nza*), but those of the plural take the characteristic *k* (*mek*, *dek*, *sek*). There are also dual forms. The verb is peculiar in using different affixes for the present and preterite. Otherwise it is much the same as the Finnish forms. We have *b* or *p* as a sign of the present, *je* or *i* for the preterite, *ket*, *kus*, etc. in the imperative; comparatives formed with *šš-*, *kč-*, *š-* (*kši*), or *le*. The negative conjugation also shows close analogies. Lappish has thus a great resemblance to Finnish, but is much nearer than the remaining western languages to Cheremissian and Mordvinian, thus connecting these latter with Finnish and the Esthonian languages.

There is no need to insist on the close connection of Livish, Votish, Vepsish, and Esthonian with Finnish. The grammatical structure and vocabulary of these languages is so alike that the fact is obvious not only to a philologist, but to the most casual learner. Esthonian is now far the most important of these languages, and has a certain amount of literary culture. It has two chief dialects, that of Revel and that of Dorpat<sup>1</sup>.

In a few cases Esthonian shows older forms than Finnish,

<sup>1</sup> The following sketch of Esthonian is taken mainly from Wiedemann's *Grammatik der Estnischen Sprache.* Petersburg, 1875.

but on the whole it is less primitive. Besides the Finnish consonants it possesses *b*, *g*, *z*, and *n̄*. The accent is on the first syllable, and has led to weakening or loss of final syllables. The vowel harmony is known only in the Dorpat dialect, and there not perfectly. Consonants are weakened in much the same way as in Finnish, *pp*, *tt*, *kk* are reduced to single consonants; *p*, *t*, *k*, *s* become *b*, *d*, *g*, *z*; *b* becomes *w* or disappears, and *d*, *g*, *z* disappear. These changes, however, do not in the present state of the language take place only when syllables are closed, although the original form generally ended with a consonant. Thus *tib*, *urk*, *rind*, *toit*, *rid* form the genitives *tiwa*, *urga*, *rinna*, *toidu*, *riu*; and the verbs *pühkima*, *uskuma*, *prükima*, *hoidma* form *pühin*, *uzun*, *prügin*, *hoian*. The noun has only eleven cases, the six local (exterior and interior) the genitive, partitive, abessive, and translative, all almost identical in form with Finnish, except that the genitive has lost the *n* of the termination, and the other cases the final vowel. The plural takes *d* in the nominative and *i* in the other cases. The pronouns resemble Finnish, but the 3rd person singular and plural is the demonstrative *tema* or *nema* in Esthonian, Livonian, and Votish, but Vepsish has *hän*, *hö*. Esthonian has almost lost the pronominal affixes, which are used only in adverbial forms, and replaced in most cases by the genitive of the personal pronoun.

The affirmative verb closely resembles Finnish, except that the concessive formed with *ne* has, except in the Dorpat dialect, been almost entirely lost. The 3rd person singular present ends regularly in *b*, and the 3rd plural in *wad*. The preterite is sometimes formed with simple *i*, but generally with *si*, and the conditional with *ksi*. The imperative 2nd singular has no

termination, but as in Finnish the root is weakened. The other persons are characterised by *gu* or *ge*. The passive is formed by affixing *ta+k+se* in the present, and *ta+i (ti)* in the preterite. The negative verb for the imperative is *ärä*, *ärgu*, *ärge*, but in the other forms Esthonian does not affix personal endings to the negative, but uses *ei* with all persons. Similarly Livish has *äb* or *ab* for all persons except the second, where *ad* is sometimes used. Votish and Vepsish follow Finnish. It will thus be seen that Esthonian, closely allied as it is to Finnish, has lost many peculiarities which it once no doubt possessed, but occasionally (e. g. the passive present in *takse* and the conditional in *kse*) preserves forms which in Finnish have been weakened or disguised.

It is easier to discuss the relations of the Finno-Ugric languages to one another than to decide what are their affinities with other groups. They are generally considered to be connected with the Samoyede, Turkish, Mandchu, and Mongolian languages, that is to say, the ancestor of each of these groups was related to the ancestor of the Finno-Ugric languages. When, however, identity of vocabulary cannot be proved, it is dangerous to make comparisons on the ground of general grammatical resemblances, because the grammar of agglutinative languages offers few striking peculiarities, and represents a stage of development through which many other languages, certainly the Aryan, have passed. The only general description which can be given of the Finno-Ugric group is that they are languages without gender, whose grammatical structure consists entirely in appending suffixes. To these characteristics is generally added another, the vowel harmony, but this exists very partially in the Finnish group. Now without denying the possible relation-

ship of Turkish, Mongol, and Mandchu to Finnish, it must be admitted that they have only a very general resemblance, and very many and precise differences. Mandchu and Mongol, with their uninflected verbs, would have been put into quite another class were they not undoubtedly akin to languages with a more developed system. And why should Japanese be excluded? It presents no phenomena incongruous with the grammar of the languages above cited, and the want of vowel harmony cannot be alleged as a difficulty.

If, however, we turn to the Samoyede languages the case is very different. They are usually mentioned as if they stood no nearer to the Finno-Ugric group than Turkish or Mandchu, and yet the resemblances in detail are numerous and striking.

They possess the vowel harmony, and apparently a law for the weakening of consonants analogous to that of Finnish and Esthonian, e. g. *kinta*, *kindan*; *mat*, *maden*; *sok*, *sogon*. The noun is strikingly like Finnish. We find a genitive in *n*, an accusative in *m* or *p* (cf. Lappish), a dative in *ni* or *n*, a locative in *nan* (cf. Finnish *na*), and an instrumental in *se*. There are three numbers, the dual is characterised by *g* or *hã* (cf. gen. in Ostiak, *ag* in Vogul), and the plural is formed with *la* or *t* (*d*). The pronouns show a good deal of variety, and it is evident that some forms (e. g. *pudar*, *thou*; *puda*, *he*) are not real pronouns but substantives used as pronouns. Still we find a general consensus for *man* as the 1st person singular, and some form of the same word for the plural; *tan* for the second singular, and *te*, *ten*, or *ši* for the plural (cf. Lappish, Cheremissian, Syrjenian, and Mordvinian). The 3rd person exists in several forms, *tep*, *sete*, *di*, etc., which may perhaps be compared with the Ostiak *ten*, Cheremissian *tidã*, and Syrjenian *sia*. The pronominal

affixes are also extraordinarily numerous and varied, but they seem to include *m* for the 1st singular, *t* or *d* for the 2nd, *jea* (cf. Magyar *ja*) for the 3rd; *mu* or *met* for the 1st plural, and *ta* or *tet* for the 2nd. The interrogative pronouns are *kutō*, *hūbea*, *hoke*, etc., *who*, and *ma*, *mi*, *what*. The verb and noun are not sharply distinguished. The verb takes two sets of pronominal suffixes, the predicative, with which an intransitive verb is always conjugated, and the possessive, which are used with both transitive and intransitive verbs. The preterite is formed by adding *s*, which occurs as a preterite suffix in Cheremissian, Mordvinian, Vogul, and Ostiak. The conjunctive is formed with *nji*, *ne*, *na* (cf. the Finnish *ne*). The imperative is formed with the syllable *kar*, *gar*, *har* (cf. Finnish *ka*). There is also an optative with the suffix *rava*, so perhaps *kar* is *ka-ra*.

Besides this similarity of grammatical forms there is a large common vocabulary. The following examples are taken at haphazard out of Castren's lexicon:—*River*, *jaha*, *joha* (Finn. *joki*); *hill*, *pirda* (Finn. *vuori*); *dark*, *paebi*, *paevuda* (*pimeä*); *to blow*, *pu'u* (*puhua*); *half*, *pealea*, *fealla* (*puoli*); *good*, *sava*, *sova* (*hyvä*); *fire*, *tu* (*tuli*); *fish*, *kole*, *hale* (*kala*); *tree*, *po*, *pe*, *pea* (*puu*); *bear*, *korg*, *kuerg* (*karhu*); *earth*, *mon* (*maa*); *narrow*, *small*, *tjea* (*tyhjä*, *empty*); *to place*, *puenan* (*panna*); *live*, *jileadm* (*eleä*); *come*, *tū'am*, *tōak* (*tulla*)<sup>1</sup>.

On the other hand, the Samoyede languages differ in many ways from the Ugro-Altaic group. The numbers are entirely different. The Ostiak Samoyede *ōker*, *one*, shows a faint

<sup>1</sup> Donner's 'Vergleichendes Wörterbuch der Finnish-Ugrischen Sprachen' also contains many comparisons with Samoyede.

resemblance to *yhte*, and *sidea*, or *sede*, *two*, has been compared with *kahte*, but such analogies are doubtful. Only the number *seven*, *sin*, *sjelde*, *sjaibua* shows a resemblance with the Finno-Ugric forms. But it is clear that the Samoyede numbers represent very primitive attempts at numeration (e. g. Jurak. *häsava-ju*, *Samoyede big number*, for *nine*, *lutsa-ju*, *Russian big number* for *ten*), and that in many cases Turkish numbers have been borrowed (cf. *tjet*, *tet*, *four*, with Yakut *tüört* and *kamass*, *khera 40*, *ilix 50*, *althon 60*, with Turkish *kirk*, *elli*, *altmış*). Samoyede is also more like the Turkish than the Finno-Ugric language in its power of adding predicative and temporal suffixes to nouns (which implies a want of distinction between the verb and noun). Thus *lütsa* means *a Russian*; *lütsam*, *I am a Russian*; *lütsams'*, *I was a Russian*.

The above sketch of Samoyede has no pretence to be exhaustive, and may be charged with inaccuracy, inasmuch as words and forms are cited indifferently from all the dialects. For a proper investigation of the question it is no doubt necessary to thoroughly study the relations of the Samoyede languages to one another, to establish the original forms, and in particular to determine the influence of foreign languages, whether Turkish or Finno-Ugric, on the Samoyede vocabulary. But unless there is something strangely misleading in the superficial character of these dialects, it appears to me that they undoubtedly stand far nearer to Finno-Ugric than do Turkish or Mongolian, and should indeed be classed as outlying members of the Finno-Ugric group. The want of similarity in the numbers is certainly very strange, but the other resemblances in vocabulary seem to me to be conclusive, unless all the words in question are borrowed.



## A FINNISH GRAMMAR.

---

THE Finnish Alphabet consists of 21 letters, viz. : **a, d, e, g, h, i, j, k, l, m, n, o, p, r, s, t, u, v** (or **w**), **y, ä, ö.**

German characters are sometimes used, in which case **v** always represents the **v** sound. In the Roman character **v** and **w** are used indifferently to express the sound of the English **v**.

The pronunciation of the consonants offers little difficulty. Most of them have the same sounds as in English.

**D.** In true Finnish words this letter is never found at the beginning or end, and in the middle always represents a softened **t** (*vide* changes of consonants p. 13). Even in this position it is hardly ever heard in the language as spoken by peasants, but replaced in the West Finnish dialect by a sound between **r** and **l**, and in the Eastern dialect entirely omitted. Educated people, however, pronounce it as in English. Thus the educated pronunciation of the genitive case of **sota** is **sodan**; but in dialects the forms **soran, solan, or soan** are found. The letter **d** is always omitted in the Kalevala, which is written in the Karelian dialect.

**G,** except in a few foreign words, is only found in the combination **ng**, representing an original **nk**, pronounced as in English. In the neighbourhood of St. Petersburg this letter is never used, **k** taking its place.



**H** is a stronger aspirate than in English, and is almost the Russian *x* or German *ch*. It is heard very distinctly at the end of syllables, e. g. in *töhdä*.

**J** is the English *y* in *yes* or *yard*.

The remaining letters of the Roman Alphabet *b, c, f, g, x, z*, and the Swedish *ä* (pronounced *o*) are sometimes met with in foreign words, but an uneducated Finn will always pronounce *b* and *f* as *p* and *v*, and is also incapable of producing such sounds as the English *ch* and *sh*, which when occurring in Russian names are generally represented in a Finnish mouth by simple *s*.

There is also a slight aspiration found at the end of some words, as *vene*, a *boat*, *syödä*, *to eat*. It is not usually written, and hardly heard except in some dialects, though it has a grammatical importance, and in some educational works is marked, as above, by an inverted comma.

It will be seen that there is a great paucity of consonants in the Finnish language; the alphabet contains but 13, and of these *g* and *d* are never found at the beginning of native words. Further no word can begin with two consonants, and foreign words, commencing with such combinations, always lose one or more letters, for instance the Swedish words *strand* (*shore*), and *spel* (*game*), appear as *ranta*, *pell*.

On the other hand there is an extraordinary wealth of vowel sounds, and it is of capital importance to learn the exact pronunciation of them all.

The simple sounds are eight in number.

**A** is the Italian *a* (English *a* in *rather* or *father*), but pronounced quicker. It is always short. <sup>2</sup>

**E** is the English *e* in *met*.

**I** is the English *i* in *bit*.

**O** is the English *o* in *hot*.

**U** is the English *u* in *bull*.

**Y** is the German *ü* in *über*.

**Ä**, which must be carefully distinguished from **A**, is the short English *a* heard in *hat*, or *trap*, and must not be pronounced as the English *a* in *late*. Thus *hän*, *he*, is pronounced exactly like *hand* without the final *d*. At the end of words (e.g. *työtä*) **ä** is more difficult for an Englishman to pronounce, as the sound is not found in English as a final.

**Ö** is like the French *eu*.

It is very important to observe that the simple vowels are all *short* sounds. The corresponding long sounds are written by doubling the vowel.

**Aa** is a long Italian *a*, like the *a* in *rather*, whereas the sound of simple *a* is shorter than that which we (generally) give to the vowel in this word.

**Ee** is like the English *a* in *pale*, *late*.

**Ii** is the English *ee* in *keen*, *three*.

**Oo** is the English *o* in *hope*.

**Uu** is the English *oo* in *boot*.

**Yy** is the German *ü*, pronounced long.

**Ää** is the *a* in *had*, but long. It is a rather difficult sound, but can be obtained by lingering over the vowel of *had* or *man*, taking care not to change its quality.

**Öö** is the sound of the simple **ö** lengthened.

Besides these simple and double vowels there are also 16 diphthongs, in which both vowels should be sounded but so rapidly and continuously as to form one syllable. They may be divided into two classes.

(1) Those in which the stress is on the second vowel. *uo*, *yö*, *ie*, e. g. *tuo*, *this*, *tie*, *a way*, *yö*, *night*.

(2) Those in which the stress is on the first vowel. Of these there are—

(a) Four ending in u. au, ou, iu, eu. *Kauppa, sale, koulu, school, hiukka, a grain, leuka, chin.*

(b) Two ending in y: äy, öy. *Väylä, river bed, höyhen, feather.*

(c) Seven ending in i: ai, oi, ui, ei, äi, öi, yi. E.g. *nai, he married, koi, a moth, pui, he threshed, vei, he led, päivä, day, löi, he struck, myi, he sold.*

These diphthongs, with the exception of those ending in i, are found only in the first syllable of words, otherwise the two vowels form two syllables: e.g. *tapa-us*, not *tapaūs*, *kope-us*, not *kopēus*, but *talkoissa*, *papeilla*.

The pronunciation of these diphthongs offers no difficulties when that of the simple vowels has been mastered. It must be remembered that they are real diphthongs where both vowel sounds are heard, but pronounced rapidly, so that *au*, though very near the *ow* in the English *how*, is not quite like it. The pronunciation of *äy* and *öy* requires attention, but is, like that of all the diphthongs, merely the result of pronouncing the simple vowels rapidly.

The chief accent in Finnish is always on the first syllable of every word. *Tálo, mínä, párempi, kivetä.*

There is a secondary accent, generally on the third, fifth, . . . syllables, but occasionally on the fourth, sixth, . . . e.g. *op-pi-mát-to-múu-des-sán-sa* (*in his ability to learn*).

But *ó-pet-ta-mát-to-múu-des-sán-sa* (*in his ignorance*).

But in no case is the second or last syllable accented, so that such sounds as *howéver, deláy*, are impossible.

The pronunciation of Finnish is generally described as easy, but this is by no means the case. It is true that the language contains no sound which is really difficult for an Englishman,

but on the other hand extreme care is necessary to pronounce even the simplest words correctly. For instance, in the word *menemme* (*we come*), three things are to be observed. The accent is on the first syllable, the *n* is single and not double, and the *m* is doubled. An Englishman, who has not learned how to pronounce, will in all probability say not *menemme*, but *menneme*. This is because he finds it natural to double the *n* after the accented syllable and hard to double the *m*, without accenting the second syllable. It must be observed, that:—

(1) The simple consonants are pronounced very lightly; *tuli*, *fire*, nearly rhymes to the English *fully*, but the *l* is lighter.

(2) The double consonants must be pronounced distinctly twice, as in Italian. *Kuk-ka*, *flower*, *kyl-lä*, *enough*, *pap-pi*, *priest*.

(3) The simple vowels are very short, the long vowels are to be dwelt on, but the length of a vowel has nothing to do with the accent. *Púhuu* must not be pronounced as if it were *Puhúu*, or *puúhu*.

The observance of these rules is necessary, not only to insure a correct pronunciation, but to prevent absolute confusion, for the paucity of consonants in Finnish results in the existence of a mass of words, which though very distinct to a native, are liable to be confounded by a stranger, and the natural tendency of an Englishman or Russian to slur over unaccented syllables results in complete unintelligibility. For instance, *tuli* is *a fire*, or, *he came*, *tulli*, *a tax*, *tulla*, *to come* (infinitive), *tule*, *come* (imperative and root), *tulee*, *he comes*: *tullee*, the concessive of the same verb, *tuuli*, *a wind*, *tuulla*, *to blow*. *Kylä* is *a village*, but *kyllä*, *enough*. *Pitää*, *to hold*, *pyytää*, *to ask*, *peittää*, *to cover*, *peite*, *a covering*, *pöytä*, *a table*.

## OF THE FORMATION OF SYLLABLES AND WORDS.

A syllable ending in a simple vowel or diphthong is called *open*: one ending in a consonant or the aspiration is called *closed*. E. g. *I-sä*, *father*, *tuo-da*, *to bring*, consist of open syllables: *kis-sat*, *cats*, *kir-jat*, *books*, of closed.

As already stated, a word cannot begin or end with more than one consonant.

If a double consonant occurs in the middle of a word the first letter must be pronounced with the preceding vowel and the second with the succeeding, e. g. *pal-lo*, not *pall-o*.

1. (1) At the end of the first syllable of a word two consonants are tolerated, provided the first be *l, r, n, or m*, and the second *k, t, p, or s*. *Pilk-ku*, *a spot*, *kent-tä*, *a field*, *simp-sukka*, *pearl*: otherwise one of the consonants must be rejected.
2. (2) At the end of the second or succeeding syllables may stand only one consonant, and every word must end with a vowel or one of the consonants *n, r, s, t, l* (rare), or the aspiration.

If the grammatical changes cause an agglomeration of consonants which does not come under these rules, the consonants must be simplified or changed; *syöks-tä* becomes *syöstä*: *avaim* (for *avaime*) becomes *avain*.

One of the most characteristic features of the Finnish language is what is called the *Harmony of the vowels*. Besides the division of the vowels according to length, there is another by which they are classified according to their quality as follows:—

Hard . . .	a, o, u.
Soft . . .	ä, ö, y.
Neutral . . .	e, i.

Long vowels and diphthongs belong to the same class as their component elements, which can never be discordant, that is to say, *ay* or *äu* are impossible combinations.

The first syllable of a word may contain any of these vowels. The formation of the remaining syllables is determined by the following rules :—

(1) If the first syllable contains a hard vowel, the vowels in the other syllables must be either hard or neutral, but not soft, **Kala**, a fish: ablative, **kalalta**. **Ansaita**, to deserve, **ansaitsevat**, they deserve.

(2) If the vowel in the first syllable is soft, then the vowels of all the other syllables must be soft or neutral, but not hard. **Tölli**, a cottage, **töllissä**, in the cottage; **kätkein**, **kätkeittäköön**.

(3) If the vowel in the first syllable is neutral, two cases occur.

(a) If the vowel of the second syllable is hard, as in the word **vieras**, the succeeding vowels must be either hard or neutral: **vierahaksi** (transitive case).

(b) If the vowel of the second syllable is either soft or neutral, all the other vowels must be soft or neutral, but not hard. **Retki**, a journey, partitive case, **retki-ä**; **sirppi**, sickle, **sirppiä**.

It will thus be seen that there are two forms of every termination in Finnish, one containing hard and the other a soft vowel. Thus the ablative ends in **-lta** or **-itä**: **maa**, **maalta**, but **työ**, **työltä**.

The hard and soft vowels are never found coexisting in any simple Finnish word, but there is no objection to such a compound as **kirkko-väki**, **kirkko-isä**.

This principle of vowel harmony is really extremely natural, and facilitates pronunciation, as will be seen by the example of French. An Englishman pronouncing such combinations as **voulu**, or **du tout** has, if not accustomed to the language, a

tendency to say *voulou, du tut*, making the two vowels the same, because the sudden change in the position of the pronouncing organs required to say *u* or *ou*, or vice versa, is a matter of some difficulty. It is the consciousness of this difficulty which has led Finnish and other languages to adopt the rule that the vowels of a word must be of the same character, so that no rude change may be necessary for their pronunciation.

This vowel harmony is not found in all the Finno-Ugric languages. In its fully developed form it exists (v. Dr. Donner, *die gegenseitige Verwandtschaft der Finnish-ugrischen Sprachen*, p. 9) only in Finnish, the Dorpat dialect of Esthonian, Hungarian, one dialect of Tcheremissian and one of Vogulian. In many others of these languages it is found in an incomplete form, whence some think that it is an original characteristic of the Finno-Ugric group, which has been lost by some tribes whose phonetic sense was not keen. Some authorities hold that in the Finno-Ugric language there are two kinds of vowel harmony: firstly, that prevailing between the different syllables of a stem, which is characteristic of all the tongues included in this group, and secondly that which assimilates the vowels of suffixes to those of the stem—i. e. that which obliges us to say *repinyt* and not *repinut*. This latter species of vowel harmony is not primitive, but has been gradually developed, perfectly in Finnish and Hungarian, and imperfectly in the other languages. This view seems very reasonable.

#### CHANGES OF SOUNDS.

All Finnish words consist of a root to which certain suffixes have been attached, but the addition of these latter often causes certain changes in the final vowel and consonants of the original root. In order to inflect words correctly it is necessary to know these changes.

## A. Changes of Vowels.

## I. THE LONG VOWELS AND DIPHTHONGS.

The long vowels are always shortened when followed by **i**, **3**, that is to say, the vowel is written once and not twice. Thus **maa**, *earth*, which takes an **i** in all the cases in the plural except the nominative, forms **maita**, **maitten**, **maiksi**, etc., not **maaita**; **puu**, *tree*, **puita**, **puiden**, **puiksi**.

The diphthongs with the accent on the second vowel, **uö**, **yö**, **4**, **ie**, when followed by **i**, reject the first vowel, and thus form a new diphthong—**työ**, *work*, becomes in the plural **töistä**, **töissä**, **töiksi**, etc.; **vien**, *I lead*, **vein** (**vie-in**), *I led*; **luo**, *he creates*, **loisi** (**luo-isi**), *he would create*.

Diphthongs ending in **i** reject this **i** if another **i** follows, **uin**, **5**. *I swim*, **uin** (for **ui-in**), *I swam*.

In the root **käy**, *to go*, **y** is changed into **v** before a vowel—e. g. **käy-in** becomes **kävin**.

## II. SHORT VOWELS.

The simple vowels **o**, **ö**, **u**, **y** are invariable, but **a**, **ä**, **e**, **i** are subject to certain changes in the last syllable of a root.

## A. Ä.

When the vowels **A** and **Ä** at the end of a root are followed by the **i** characteristic of the imperfect tense, or plural, they undergo the following changes:—

(1) **Ä** is always rejected in disyllables—e. g. **heitän**, *I throw*, **6**. **heitin**, *I threw*.

(2) **A** at the end of disyllabic roots is rejected before **i**, if the **7**. vowel of the first syllable is **o**, **u**, **uu**, **ou**, **uo**, **oi**, or **ui**: but is changed into **o** if that vowel is **a**, **e**, **i**, **aa**, **ii**, **ai**, **au**, **ei**, **eu**, **ie**, or **iu**. Thus **ottavat**, *they take*, past **ottivat** (for **ottaivat**);



nuora, *a cord*, nuorilla, *with cords*; tupa, *a hut*, tuvissa, *in huts*. But on the other hand, kala, *a fish*, kaloiksi; annan, *I give*, annoin, *I gave*; kannan, *I carry*, kannoin, *I carried*.<sup>1</sup>

Disyllabic verbs, where the final *a* is preceded by *t*, can change it into *o*, but generally reject it, ahtoi or ahti: kaartoi or kaarti.

8. Derivatives of verbs in *ma*, *ja*, *va*, always reject the *a*: sanova, sanovia; ottaja, ottajia; puhuva, puhuvia.
9. (3) Polysyllabic verbs always reject *a* and *ä* in the imperfect. Odotan, *I wait*, odotin, *I waited*, etc. The rejection also takes place in polysyllabic substantives ending in *-mpa*, *-mpä*, and derivatives in *va*, *vä*, *sa*, *sä*, and those where *h* or any vowel but *i* precedes the final *a*, e. g. vanhempä, vanhemille; sanova, sanovina; vieraha, vierahille; kapea, kapeita. But should the final *a* be preceded by two consonants, or the penultimate syllable contain the vowel *i*, *a* and *ä* become respectively *o* and *ö*; asia, *a thing*, asioissa; karitsa, *a lamb*, karitsoitä; kynttilä, *a candle*, kynttilöitä, *candles*. But the words isäntä, emäntä always reject *i*, isännille, emännille.
10. (4) In cases which come under none of these heads, e. g. such a word as peruna, *potatoe*, *a*, *ä* can be either dropped or changed to *o*, *ö*, perunia or perunoita, partitive case plural.
11. (5) *a* and *ä* change to *e* before the comparative suffix *-mpa* in disyllabic words, and before the suffix *ta*, *tta*, of the passive. Vanha, *old*, comparative vanhempi; istutan, *I plant*, istutetaan, passive.
12. (6) The nominative sing. of superlatives (stem *-impa*), and of caritive adjectives (stem *-toma*), drops *a*: kovimpa becomes kovin (by rules 24, 46); and viattoma, *innocent*, viaton (46).
13. (7) *a*, *ä* become *i* in the nominative sing. of comparatives, stem kovempä, nominative kovempi.

<sup>1</sup> But suola, *salt*, and puola, *bilberry*, change the final *a* into *o* to distinguish them from suoli, *an intestine*, and puoli, *half*.

## E.

(1) E is always rejected before i. **Kive-illä** becomes **ktivillä**, 14. *with stones*; **Mere-illä**, **Merillä**.

(2) Dissyllables ending in e always change that vowel to i 15. in the nominative singular. Stems, *mere*, *sea*, *tuule*, *wind*, nominatives, *meri*, *tuuli*.

The only important exceptions to this rule are the words *itse*, *self*, and *kolme*, *three*. **Nukke**, *a doll*, is also found, and *sine*, *blue*, is used as well as *sini*.

The stem *miehe*, *man*, makes *mies* in the nominative sing.

(3) Polysyllabic stems ending in e reject it in the nominative 16. sing. Stem, *sisare*; nominative, *sisar*, *a sister*.

(4) The final e of a disyllabic stem disappears in nouns 17. before terminations commencing with t, and in verbs before terminations beginning with k or n, provided that e is preceded by any simple consonant but k, p, v, m, or by a double consonant of which the last letter is t or s (except ht). Thus from the stem *une* (*sleep*), *vuore* (*mountain*), *vete* (*water*) (nominative, *vesi*), come the forms *unta*, *vuorta*, *vettä*, and from the verbal stems *tule* (*come*), *mene* (*go*), such forms as *tulkaa*, *tullut* (for *tulnut*), *menkää*. **Lapse**, *a child*, forms *lasta*, for *lapsta*; *veitse*, *a knife*, *veistä* for *veitstä*.

But e remains in the verbs *potea*, *to fall ill*, *tuntea*, *to know*, and in *itse*, *self*, *suksi*, *snowshoe*, *sääksi*, *a gnat*, *ripsi*, *an eyelash*, *viiksi*, *a moustache*, which form their partitives in *itseä*, *suksea*, etc.

But in disyllabic words e is not rejected if preceded by k, 18. p, v, or m. Thus the stems *joke*, *river*, *läpe*, *a hole*, *kive*, *stone*, *Suome*, *Finland*, form their partitives *jokea*, *läpeä*, *kiveä*, *Suomea*.

Likewise e remains in disyllables where it is preceded by 19.

ht, or by any two consonants of which the last is not t or s: *tähte*, *star*, and *lehte*, *leaf*, form *tähteä* and *lehteä*. *Onne*, *fortune*, and *hanhe*, *goose*, *onnea* and *hanhea*.

But *yksi*, *one*, and *kaksi*, *two* (roots *yhte* and *kahte*), form *yhtä* and *kahta* for *yhttä*, *kahtta*. *Lumi*, *snow*, is also an exception and forms *lunta*. Also the verbal stems *teke* and *näke*: infinitive, *tehdä*, *nähdä*.

20. In polysyllabic words the *e* is always suppressed: root *kysy-mykse*, *a question*, partitive case, *kysymystä* for *kysymykstä*.

## I.

21. (1) When *i* at the end of substantives meets the *i* of the plural, the first *i* changes into *e*, *risti*, *cross*, *risteissä*. This rule is however not always observed, and forms like *ristissä* are used for the plural. But in other cases, when two *i*'s meet, the first falls out, pres. *etsivät*, imp. *etsivät*, not *etsiivät*. In old Finnish, words like *etseivät* are found.
22. (2) When *i* (generally owing to the dropping of a consonant) is found between two vowels it becomes *j*. *Kaloia* becomes *kaloja*.
23. All these four vowels, *a*, *ä*, *e*, and *i*, are rejected before the *-i* of the terminations of the superlative: *vanha*, *old*, *selkeä*, *bright*, *suure*, *great*, *auli*, *liberal*, make in the superlative *vanhin*, *selkein*, *suurin*, *aulin*.

## B. Changes of Consonants.

24. A word cannot end with more than one consonant. If the rejection of a final vowel leaves two consonants at the end of a word, one is rejected, usually the first, e.g. *Lupaukse*, *a promise*. By rule 16, *e* is rejected in the nominative sing., and there remains *lupauks*, which becomes *lupaus*. But if the second consonant is not one of those allowed to end a word by

rule 2, it is rejected and the first only kept. *Suurimpi* becomes *suurimp*, and as *p* is not a possible final letter, *m* is kept, and by rule 46 (below) becomes *n*, *suurin*.

#### THE SOFTENING OF THE HARD CONSONANTS *K*, *T*, *P*.

General rule : Whenever one of the three hard consonants, *k*, *t*, *p*, is found at the beginning of a naturally short and open syllable (that is, one ending in a simple vowel) which becomes closed (that is, ends in a consonant) owing to the addition of a suffix, then the hard consonant is softened or rejected<sup>1</sup>.

It must be observed that some syllables which are apparently open are treated in grammar as being closed, because they end with the aspiration. This aspiration, though hardly heard except in dialects, generally represents an original consonant (*v*, the rules respecting the formation of the Imperative, Infinitives I and II, and passive).

This curious rule of the softening of consonants pervades the whole Finnish language and is one of its distinguishing features. The addition of a final letter to a syllable necessitates a certain effort in order to sound it accurately, and in order to compensate for the difficulty thus added at the end the pronunciation of the first letter is made easier. It is indeed clear that it is easier to say *kukan* than *kukkan*, if both *k*'s are carefully pronounced ; but an English mouth does not find it easier to say *revin* than *repin*. But it must be remembered that the Finnish language is extraordinarily susceptible in regard to consonants. Mouths which are incapable of pronouncing two consonants at the beginning of a word must have to struggle with difficulties in pronunciation which we are quite incapable of understanding. It must also be remembered that simple consonants are pro-

<sup>1</sup> It is noticeable that this rule does not apply in the rare case of a monosyllabic root ending in a short open vowel becoming closed. *Ku*, the root of the pronoun *kuka*, forms *kun* not *gun*.

nounced exceedingly lightly, so that their disappearance is easier than it would be, were they sounded as strongly as in our language.

## K.

25. (1) *kk* becomes *k*. That is to say, when the final syllable of *kukka*, *flower*, becomes closed by the addition of *n*, one of the *k*'s is dropped, and we have *kukan* for *kukkan*. So *kirkko*, *kirkossa*.
26. (2) *nk* becomes *ng*. *Aurinko*, *sun*, forms the genitive *auringon*. *Kaupunki*, *town*, *kaupungin*.
27. (3) *lk*, *rk* become simply *l*, *r*, but if followed by *e*, *lj*, *rj*. For example, *jalka*, *a foot*, genitive *jalan*; *märkä*, *wet*, genitive *märän*; *kulke*, *leave*, *kuljen*, *I leave*; *särke*, *break*, *särjen*, *I break*.

*hk* generally becomes simply *h*, but may remain unchanged, *tuhka*, *ash*, genitive *tuhan*, but sometimes *tuhkan*; *sähkö*, *electricity*, genitive *sähön*. In old Finnish such forms as *tuhvan* are found.

28. (4) Between two vowels *k* generally is lost altogether when the syllable is closed; *tako*, *forge*, *taon*, *I forge*; *vika*, *a fault*, genitive *vian*.

If the *k* is preceded by a diphthong ending in *i* or by simple *i*, a *j* is developed when *k* falls out: thus *aika*, *time*, *poika*, *boy*, *ikä*, *life*, *make ajan*, *pojan*, *ijän*. Similarly when *k* falls out between two *u*'s or two *y*'s, a *v* is developed, at any rate in pronunciation. The orthography varies between *uu* and *uvu*, but the latter is generally adopted when there is any ambiguity, e. g. *puvun*, from *puku*, *clothes*, not *puun*, because this is liable to be confused with *puun*, the genitive of *puu*, *a tree*; *suvun* from *suku*, *a family*; but *suun* from *suu*, *a month*; *luvun* from *luku*, *a number*, but *luun* from *luu*, *a bone*.

29. (5) *sk*, *tk* remain unchanged, *lasku*, *laskun*, *itku*, *itkun*.

## T.

- (1) tt becomes t, *opetta, teach, opetan, I teach.* 30.  
 (2) lt, rt, nt become ll, rr, nn. *Pelto, field, pellow; parta, beard, parran; kanta, base, kannan.* 31.  
 (3) After a vowel or h, t becomes d. *Pata, pot, padan; tahto, wish, tahdon*<sup>1</sup>. 32.

## P.

- (1) pp becomes p. *Pappi, priest, papin.* 33.  
 (2) mp becomes mm, stem *kovempa, harder, kovemman.* 34.  
 (3) In other cases p becomes v. *Lepo, rest, levon; repi, tear, revin; halpa, cheap, halvan.* 35.

N.B.—This softening of k, t, p, takes place if in a polysyllabic radical one of them is the first letter of a syllable whose vowel forms a diphthong with the i of the plural. *Harakka, magpie, harakoita; aurinko, auringoita, sun; palkinto, palkinnoita, reward.* 36.

These rules for the weakening of consonants are rigorously observed throughout the language, with the one exception that the addition of the pronominal suffixes produces no change in a word. Though *tapa + n* becomes *tavan*, *tapa + nsa* remains *tapansa*.

## OTHER CHANGES OF CONSONANTS.

T, meeting with the vowel i, under certain circumstances becomes s.

T in the last syllable of a word, when preceded by a vowel or 37.

<sup>1</sup> In the Kalevala dialect t always disappears instead of becoming d, and some traces of this remain in ordinary Finnish. (a) In the declensions of such roots as *lyhyte*, short: gen. *lyhyen*, and in some contracted substantives. (b) In the loss of t in the syllable *ta* used to form infinitives and participles.

by l, n, r, becomes s when a final e is rejected or changed into i. E. g. in the nominative of the root *vete*, *water*, the final e becomes i by rule, and t changes to s, forming *vesi*. Similarly when the final e of *hyvyyte*, *goodness*, is rejected t becomes s, forming the nominative *hyvyys*; so also *jälte* becomes *jälsi*, and *varte*, *varsi*.

38. T also becomes s before i in the plural of ordinal numbers whose stem ends in -nte. E. g. the essive singular of stem *neljänte*, *fourth*, is *neljäntenä*; in the plural the corresponding case is *neljänsinä*, for *neljäntinä*.
39. The plural of stems ending in -ute, -yte, forms the essive and other analogous cases from a stem ending in -ksi. *Suuruus*, *greatness*, has for the sing. the stem *suuruute* (e. g. essive *suuruutena*), but forms in the plur. *suuruuksina*, etc. So also from *hyvyyte*, *goodness*, comes from the sing. *hyvyytenä*, and the plur. *hyvyyksinä*.
40. T in the last syllable of a verb, preceded by a double vowel or l, n, r, changes to s before the i of the imperf., the vowels a, ä being suppressed. Thus from *pyytää*, *to ask*, comes *pyysi* (for *pyytäi*); from *taistaa*, *can*, *taisi*. But *pitää*, *to hold*, makes *piti*, because this vowel is simple.

*Nousee*, *he arises*, forms the imperfect *nousi*, but *noutaa*, *he brings*, makes *nouti*, to distinguish it from the other. Similarly *kyntää*, *to plough*, generally forms its imperfect *kynti*, to distinguish it from the same tense of *kynsiä*, *to scratch*.

In poetry forms like *kielti*, for *kielsi*, are found, and in the ordinary language a number of verbs which should by the above rule form the imperfect in *si*, either keep *ti*, as *hoiti* (*hoittaa*, *to look after*), *jouti* (*joutaa*, *to have time*), or have alternative forms, *hääti* or *hääsi* (*häättää*, *to keep off*), *sääti* or *sääsi* (*säättää*, *to place*), *kiiti* or *kiisi* (from *kiittää*, *to hasten*), *hyyti* or *hyysi* (*hyyttää*, *to freeze*), *syyti* or *syysi* (*syytää*, *throw out*), *sieti* or *siesi* (*sietää*, *to bear*), *jäyti* or *jäysi* (*jäyttää*, *to gnaw*).

**T** always becomes **s** in the imperfect of contracted verbs, *lupata, to promise, pres. lupaan, impf. lupasin.*

The combination **ts** is pronounced in dialects as **tt** or **ht**; e.g. *metsä, a forest, appears as mettä or mehtä.*

**K** before **t, d, n** becomes **h**. E.g. from the root *teke*, whose **41.** final vowel is liable to be rejected, come *tehtiin, tehdään, tehnen*, and also *tehkää*.

But **h** before **s** becomes **k**. Thus the stems *yhte, one, kahte, 42. two, haahte, a ship*, form the nominatives *yksi, kaksi, haaksi, te* becoming *si* by the rules previously given, and **h** changing to **k**.

In contracted words (*v. page 18*) **h**, when left as a final **43.** letter, becomes **s, t,** or the aspiration. Stem *vieraha*, nominative *vieras*, for *vierah*; stem *kevähä*, nominative *kevät, for kevähä*; stem *venehe*, nominative *vene'*, for *venehe*.

Though the above rules are given as being convenient for grammatical purposes, there is no doubt that in all these cases **h** is a weakening of some other letter; indeed, there is reason to think it is never original in Finnish. *Vieras* represents an original *vierasa*, and the genitive *vierasan* is weakened into *vierahan* and *vieraan*. Similarly in *yksi, yhden*, the **k** is more primitive.

**N**, after **l, n, s**, is frequently, though not always, assimilated, **44.** especially in verbs. Thus *tul-nut, pur-nut, pes-nyt, become tullut, purrut, pessyt.*

In polysyllabic verbs **n** becomes **t** before **k** and **t**. Thus root **45.** *pakene* makes in the imperative *paetkaa* (for *pakenkaa*, which becomes first *paketkaa*) and infinitive *paeta*. (The steps are *pakeneta', pakenta', paketta', paetta', paeta.*)

**M**, at the end of a word, always becomes **n**. Stem *avaime, 46. a key*, nominative *avain*, for *avaim*. Similar is the formation of the nominatives of superlatives: *kovimpi* becomes *kovimp*



by rejection of the final vowel, and then *kovim* (rule 24), which changes to *kovin*.

47. **M** also becomes *n* before terminations beginning with *t* or *n*. Thus the stem *rahattoma*, *moneyless*, shortened to *rahatom*, makes *rahatonta* and *rahatonna* in the partitive and essive cases.

#### CONTRACTION.

When two vowels are found together from the loss of a consonant or other causes, they frequently become a long vowel or a diphthong. This phenomenon is called *Contraction*, and occurs frequently in Finnish. It can, like the loss of final vowels, be easily accounted for on phonetic grounds, if it be remembered that the tonic accent of a word is always on the first syllable, so that there is a natural tendency to drop or pronounce quickly syllables at the end of words.

This contraction is of two kinds:—

48. I. The first kind takes place when the vowels of the two final syllables of a word are the same, and the consonant between them (*h* in nouns or *t* in verbs) falls out. Thus, *vierahan* becomes *vieraan* (two syllables); *lupatan*, *lupaan*; *tervehen*, *terveen*.

This form of contraction is universally employed in certain classes of nouns and verbs, the uncontracted forms being only found in poetry and the Karelian dialect.

49. II. The second kind is when the vowels of the last and penultimate syllables of a word meet, the last vowel being a *o* or *ä*. Under these circumstances the assimilation of the second vowel to the first, and contraction of the two into one long vowel is admissible, but not obligatory, though it usually takes place if the first vowel is *o*, *e*, or *ö*. Thus *lankean* (*I fall*), *kokoan* (*I collect*), become *lankeen*, *kokoon*. But the contraction of *ia* or *ua* to *ii*, *uu* is rare.

Forms like *silee*, *ainoo* for *sileä*, *ainoa* are found in poetry. In prose this form of contraction is confined to verbs.

The contraction of two vowels into one long vowel or diphthong also occurs in adding the case suffixes:—

(1) The *a* or *ä* of the partitive sing. with the final vowel of roots ending in a or *ä* forms a long vowel, e.g. *jalka-a*, *leipä-ä* become *jalkää*, *leipää*.

(2) When the *e* of a termination becomes *i* after the final vowel of a root, this *i* forms a diphthong with that vowel, e.g. *korvaen* becomes *korv<sup>ai</sup>n*; and when the *i* of the plural meets with the final vowel of a root it forms a diphthong with it.

The point in all these cases is that, though no change takes place in writing, the two vowels form one syllable instead of two.

Vowels which meet from the disappearance of *k* are often contracted in pronunciation: *t<sup>ee</sup>n*, *n<sup>ai</sup>n* from *teken*, *näkin*, are pronounced as one syllable.

## NOUNS.

Finnish is called an agglutinative language; that is to say, the words, as they appear used in a sentence, are formed of roots, to which have been added certain terminations: thus *taloiltansa*, meaning *from his farms*, is made up from the root *talo*, and the suffixes *i* (a sign of the plural), *-lta* (giving the idea of from), and *-nsa* (his).

✓ Every root in Finnish ends in a vowel or a diphthong.

In adding suffixes to a root the rules for the changes of letters must be carefully observed. The result of applying them is that from the original full root there may be produced three modifications:—

(1) The closed form. Root *vete*, *water*, closed form *veden*.

- (2) The shortened form. **paimen** for **paimene**.  
 (3) A form both closed and shortened. **tantere**, nominative **tanner**.

*Declension.*

The Finnish noun is declined by adding suffixes to the root, which undergoes any modifications required by the rules of Euphony.

There are fifteen cases, which, with the exception of the nominative, may be regarded as the noun followed by a preposition, or rather postposition. The Finnish word *maalta* corresponds to the English *from land*, only the *from* is put after *land*, and the two are written as one word. *maalta* is analogous to such an expression as the Greek *γῆς ἀπό*, only that in this case we have both a case-form and a postposition. Most of the terminations have two forms, one with a hard, one with a soft vowel. Roots with hard vowels take the hard termination, those with soft, the soft ones. Thus we find *maa-ssa*, but *työ-ssä*.

These fifteen cases are as follow :—

(1) The *nominative* has no suffix, though it does not always represent the pure root. In *maa*, *land*, the two are identical, but the roots *käte*, *vete*, *vieraha* produce the nominatives *käsi*, *vesi*, *vieras*.

(2) The *partitive* is formed by the suffix *ta*, *tä* or *a*, *ä*. It may be roughly described as answering to a noun preceded in English by the word *some*, or in French by the partitive article. *Leipää*, *some bread*, *du pain*; *vettä*, *some water*, *de l'eau*.

(3) The *genitive* is formed by the suffix *n*. *Puun*, *of the tree*.

The Finnish genitive really represents two cases, the genitive and accusative, which have become confused in one form.

(4) The *inessive* expresses the place, in which anything takes place, and is formed with the suffix *-ssa, -ssä*. *Missä, where (in what); kirkossa, in the church.*

(5) The *elative* expresses the place from which motion takes place, and is formed with the suffix *-sta, -stä*. *Mistä, whence (from what); kirkosta, from the church; talosta, from the farm.*

(6) The *illative* is formed by adding to the root the consonants *h—n*, between which is inserted the last vowel of the root, or, if it ends in a diphthong, the second vowel in that diphthong. *Talo, talohon; metsä, metsähän; työ, työhön*. Generally the termination is shortened by the omission of *h*, and we have forms like *taloon, metsään*. It expresses the place into which motion takes place.

(7) The *adessive* is formed with the suffix *-lla, -llä*, and signifies the place on which, or the object with which, anything is done. *Lattialla, on the floor; kädellä, with the hand.*

(8) The *ablative* is formed with the suffix *-lta, -ltä*, and expresses motion from. *Maalta, from the land; pöydältä, from the table.*

(9) The *allative* expresses motion towards, and is formed with the suffix *-lle*. *Pellolle, to the field; rannalle, to the shore.*

(10) The *abessive* is formed with the suffix *-tta*. It expresses the absence of something; *rahatta, without money.*

(11) The *prolative* is formed by adding the syllable *-tse*, and expresses motion along; *talotse, along the farm*. In modern Finnish it is rarely used in the singular. *Maitse, meritse, by land, by sea.*

(12) The *translative* is formed with the suffix *-ksi*. It generally is used to express some change in the form of existence. *Hän tuli sotamieheksi, he became a soldier.*

(13) Whereas the *essive*, formed by adding *-na* or *-nä* to the root, expresses a state of being regarded as continuous. *Lapsena, as a child.*

(14) The *comitative* is formed with the syllable *-ne*, and is generally used in the plural, and with a possessive affix. *Lapsine* (or oftener *lapsinensa*), *with his children.*

(15) The *instructive* is formed by simply adding the letter *n* to a root, and expresses the means by which anything is done. *Käsin, with the hands.* The singular of the instructive is only used in poetry.

There are two numbers in Finnish, the singular and plural. For the singular, the suffixes are added directly to the root: to form the plural other letters are also added.

A. The nominative plural is formed by adding *t* to the root, e.g. root and nominative sing. *maa*, nominative plur. *maat*; root and nominative sing. *pata*, nominative plur. (by rule 31) *padat*; root *vieraha*, nominative sing. *vieras*, nominative plur. *vierahat*; root *vete*, nominative sing. *vesi*, nominative plur. *vedet*.

B. The other cases, with the exceptions below mentioned, simply add *i* to the root, which suffers the necessary phonetic changes, and then take the same suffixes as the sing. *Maa*, inessive sing. *maassa*, inessive plur. *maissa* (3); *pata*, illative sing. *patahan* or *pataan*, illative plur. *patoihin* (7); *vieraha*, translative sing. *vierahaksi* or *vieraaksi*, translative plur. *vierahiksi* or *vieraiksi* (11).

C. But the genitive plural is formed with the suffix *-ite* (apparently a combination of the two suffixes *i* and *t(e)* above mentioned), placed before the case suffix *-n*.

This suffix is found in three forms:—

(1) *ite + n* becomes regularly *-iden*, *maiden*.

(2) Monosyllabic roots and polysyllabic roots ending with

a long vowel have a strengthened form, *-itte-n*, often found alternating with *-ide-n*, e. g. *maitten*, *vierahitten*.

(3) The *t* drops out and the suffix becomes simply *-ie-n*, e. g. *jalka-iten* becomes (rule 7) *jalko-iten*, then *jalko-ien*, then (rule 21) *jalkojen*; *äiti-iten* becomes *äititen*, and then *äitien*. Sometimes the *i* or *j* drops out between two vowels; e. g. *kirkkoen*.

Most of the cases above enumerated are common to nearly all the Finno-Ugric languages, though the same suffixes are used with rather different meanings.

The suffix *-na*, called here *essive*, is used in most other languages of the family as a locative, and a few traces of this use are preserved in Finnish, e. g. *kotona*, *at home*, *ulkona*, *out of doors*, (*olla*) *läsnä*, *to be present*, *takana*, *behind*, *tänä pänä*, *tänään*, *to-day*.

No accusative is usually given in Finnish grammars, because this case coincides with the genitive in the sing., and with the nominative in the plural. The accusative sing. is, however, etymologically a distinct formation, with the termination *m* or *ma*, as is proved by a comparison of the other languages of the family (Ostiak and Vogulian *ma*, *me*, or *m*; Tcheremissian and Syrjenian *m*). As *m* cannot be a final in Finnish, it becomes *n*, and the case is indistinguishable from the genitive.

There is also an accusative in *-t*, found in the pronominal declensions of Finnish, Ostiak, Syrjenian, and Mordvinian. It is supposed to represent the demonstrative pronoun *ta* suffixed to a word, and perhaps stands for *-nt*.

Another case which occurs sporadically, though not usually given in grammars, is the Excessive, ending in *-nta*. This termination is much used in the dialect spoken about St. Petersburg, and is even employed by some writers. It expresses departure either from a place or a state; e. g. *kotonta*, *from home*; *hän jäi palvelijanta*, *he gave up being a servant*.

Hän muutti paimenenta rengiksi, *he became a farm-labourer instead of a shepherd.* It is also found in some adverbial forms, e. g. siintä, luonta, takanta.

Another sporadic case is an allative or dative ending in -*nne*, -*ne*, or -*n*. Its original form seems to have been -*nek*, for in the Savo-dialect we find *tuonnek*, *tännek* instead of the ordinary *tuonne*, *tänne*, *thither*, *hither*. In written Finnish this termination is only used in a few adverbs, as *sinne*, *thither*, *muuanne*, *to another place*. *Alle*, *päälle*, and *ylle* are also apparently for *al-ne*, *pääl-ne*, *yl-ne*. In the expression *Jumalan kiitos*, *thanks be to God*, *Jumalan* appears to be really this case, and similar strange uses of an apparent genitive in old writings are no doubt to be explained the same way.

It will be observed that the local cases are arranged in two sets of three, one characterised by the presence of *s*, the other by that of *l*.

We have:—

Inessive <i>s-sa</i> (for <i>s-na</i> )	Adessive <i>l-la</i> (for <i>l-na</i> )
Elativ <i>s-ta</i>	Ablativ <i>l-ta</i>
Illativ <i>sen</i> or <i>h-n</i> .	Allativ <i>l-le</i> (for <i>l-len</i> )

The Essive in *na* and Excessive in *n-ta* are parts of a similar set.

The case called adessive (-*lla*) is also used as an instrumental, and probably represents two original cases.

The primitive form of the abessive appears to have been *taka* or *taha*, which is considered by some as identical with the word *taka*, *back*. Besides the regular termination in -*tta*, the forms -*ta* and -*t* are found in dialects, and -*ti* in some adverbs; *ääneti*, *silently*; *huoleti*, *carelessly*. Closely connected with the abessive are the caritive adjectives ending in -*ttoma*.

The prolativ, though generally counted as one of the

regular cases, is really very seldom employed, and cannot be formed from the majority of nouns.

The plur. inflection of the Finno-Ugric languages, gives three suffixes, *t*, *k*, and *i*, of which *t* and *i* are found in Finnish. It has been suggested that the *t* and *k* are really identical, *k* not being allowable as a final letter. It is not improbable that *i* may be the remains of a *k* weakened to *j* (cf. 26, 27).

There are no genders in Finnish.

The simplest way of dividing the declensions is by the form of the Partitive case.

The *first* declension has the partitive ending in *ta* or *tä*, after a long vowel or diphthong.

The *second* has the partitive ending in *a* or *ä*, after a short vowel.

The *third* has the partitive in *ta* or *tä*, after a consonant.

#### *The First Declension.*

This declension includes all words ending in a long vowel or a diphthong.

It has the following characteristics:—

(1) The partitive sing. has the suffix *ta* or *tä*, after a long vowel or diphthong.

(2) The nominative sing. is the same as the root.

(3) No change of consonants takes place in the root.

(4) The genitive plur. is found ending in *-iden* or *-itten*, before which the last vowel of the root is rejected by rule 3 or 4.

(5) Monosyllabic roots form the illative in *-n*, the last vowel of the root being between the two consonants: *täi*, *täihin*; *jää*, *jäähän*. But dissyllables ending in a long vowel, e. g. *harmaa*, *ehtoo*, have the illative sing. in *-sen* and the illative



plur. in *-sin* or *-hin*. Sing. *harmaasen*, plur. *harmaisin* or *harmaihin*.

Example of a noun of first declension with a hard vowel.  
Puu, a tree:—

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> puu	puut
<i>Part.</i> puuta	puita
<i>Gen.</i> puun	puiden or puitten
<i>In.</i> puussa	puissa
<i>El.</i> puusta	puista
<i>Il.</i> puuhun	puihin
<i>Ad.</i> puulla	puilla
<i>Abl.</i> puulta	puilta
<i>All.</i> puulle	puille
<i>Abes.</i> puutta	puitta
<i>Prol.</i> [puutse]	puitse
<i>Transl.</i> puuksi	puiksi
<i>Ess.</i> puuna	puina
<i>Com.</i> (puune)	puine
<i>Instr.</i> (puun)	puin

There is nothing to be remarked on the declension of this word, except that in the plur. the diphthong *uu* is shortened to *u* before the vowel *i*; *puissa*, etc., and not *puuissa*.

The declension of a noun with a soft vowel, e. g. *työ*, *work*, is exactly analogous, except that the suffixes have the soft forms *-ssä*, *-stä*, etc.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> työ	työt
<i>Part.</i> työtä	töitä
<i>Gen.</i> työn	töitten, or töiden
<i>In.</i> työssä	töissä
<i>El.</i> työstä	töistä
<i>Il.</i> työhön	töihin
<i>Ad.</i> työllä	töillä
<i>Abl.</i> työltä	töiltä
<i>All.</i> työlle	töille
<i>Abes.</i> työttä	töittä

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Prol.</i> [työtse]	töitse
<i>Transl.</i> työksi	töiksi
<i>Ess.</i> työnä	töinä
<i>Com.</i> [työne]	töine
<i>Instr.</i> [työn]	töin

According to rule 4 before the *i* of the plural the vowel *y* is rejected from the diphthong *yö*. So *suo*, *yö*, *tie* form in the plural *soissa*, *öillä*, *tein*.

### *The Second Declension.*

The second declension has the following characteristics:—

(1) The partitive sing. ends in *-a* or *-ä* (*-ta*, *-tä*) after a short vowel. (Polysyllables have often *-ta*, *-tä*.)

(2) The nominative has the same number of vowels as the root, and generally preserves those vowels unaltered except that the final *a* or *ä* of comparatives and final *e* become *i*.

(3) The illative sing. ends in the last vowel of the root doubled with *n* suffixed; *kirkkoon*, not *kirkohon*.

(4) The genitive plur. generally ends in *-jen* or *-en*, as described above. In the ordinary language this *-en* is further weakened to *-in* after the vowel of the root, unless that vowel is itself *i*.

(5) Hard consonants at the beginning of the last syllable are of course softened by rules 24–35, when the syllable becomes closed.

This declension comprises—

A. Roots ending in the vowels *o*, *ö*, *u*, *y*, which never change.

Example :—*Aurinko, the sun.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> aurinko	auringot
<i>Part.</i> aurinkoa	aurinkoja, auringoita
<i>Gen.</i> auringon	aurinkoen, aurinkoin aurinkojen or auringoiden
<i>In.</i> auringossa	auringoissa
<i>El.</i> auringosta	auringoista
<i>Il.</i> aurinkoon	aurinkoihin
<i>Ad.</i> auringolla	auringoilla
<i>Abl.</i> auringolta	auringoilta
<i>All.</i> auringolle	auringoille
<i>Abes.</i> auringotta	auringoitta
<i>Prol.</i> [auringotse]	auringoitse
<i>Transl.</i> auringoksi	auringoiksi
<i>Ess.</i> aurinkona	aurinkoina
<i>Com.</i> [aurinkone]	aurinkoine
<i>Instr.</i> [auringon]	auringoin

Here in the majority of cases the *k* is weakened to *g*, because the syllable which it commences becomes closed containing a single vowel or a diphthong formed by that vowel with the *i* of the plural; but the *k* remains in such places as the illative, where the syllables remain open. The original form of the genitive plur. would be *aurinkoiten*. This is weakened to *auringoiden*. Then the *d* dropping out we have *aurinkojen*, *aurinkoen*, or *aurinkoin*.

*Luettu* (past participle), meaning *read*, is thus declined :—

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> luettu	luetut
<i>Part.</i> luettua	luettuja or luettuita
<i>Gen.</i> luettun	luetuitten, luituiden } luettujen or luettuin }
<i>In.</i> luettussa	luetuissa
<i>El.</i> luettusta	luetuista
<i>Il.</i> luettuun	luettuihin
<i>Ad.</i> luettulla	luetuilla
<i>Abl.</i> luettulta	luetuilta
<i>All.</i> luettulle	luetuille

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Abs.</i> luetusta	luetuitta
<i>Prol.</i> ———	—————
<i>Transl.</i> luetuksi	luetuiksi
<i>Ess.</i> luettuna	luettuina
<i>Com.</i> ———	luettuine
<i>Instr.</i> ———	luetuin

Here *t* is weakened to *t* when the syllable becomes closed (rule 30), and the partitive and genitive plur. either take or reject *t*.

The declension of words with soft vowels is precisely similar, except that the suffixes have soft vowels. *Eläimistö*, *animal kingdom*, *lyöty*, *struck*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> eläimistö	eläimistöt
<i>Part.</i> eläimistöä	eläimistöjä
<i>Gen.</i> eläimistön	eläimistöjen }
	eläimistöen }
	eläimistöin }
<i>In.</i> eläimistössä	eläimistöissä
<i>El.</i> eläimistöstä	eläimistöistä
<i>Il.</i> eläimistöön	eläimistöihin
<i>Ad.</i> eläimistöillä	eläimistöillä
<i>Abl.</i> eläimistöiltä	eläimistöiltä
<i>All.</i> eläimistölle	eläimistöille
<i>Abs.</i> eläimistöttä	eläimistöittä
<i>Transl.</i> eläimistöksi	eläimistöiksi
<i>Ess.</i> eläimistönä	eläimistöinä
<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> lyöty	lyödyt
<i>Part.</i> lyötyä	lyötyjä
<i>Gen.</i> lyödyn	lyötyjen }
	lyötyen }
	lyötyin }
<i>In.</i> lyödyssä	lyödyissä
<i>El.</i> lyödyistä	lyödyistä
<i>Il.</i> lyötyyn	lyötyihin
<i>Ad.</i> lyödyillä	lyödyillä
<i>Abl.</i> lyödyiltä	lyödyiltä
<i>All.</i> lyödyille	lyödyille

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Abes.</i> lyödyttä	lyödyittä
<i>Transl.</i> lyödyksi	lyödyiksi
<i>Ess.</i> lyötynä	lyötyinä

Here the *t* of *lyöty* is weakened when the syllable is closed, but the *t* of *eläimistö* remains, being preceded by *s* and consequently unchangeable.

B. All roots ending in *a*, *ä*, except superlatives for adjectives, e. g. *pata*, *a pot*. In this declension the final *a* frequently becomes *o* in the plural by rule 7. Dissyllabic words reject *t* in the partitive both sing. and plur., and in the genitive plur.; but polysyllabic words optionally preserve it in these cases.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> pata	padat
<i>Part.</i> pataa	patoja
<i>Gen.</i> padan	patojen, [pataen] patain
<i>In.</i> padassa	padoissa
<i>El.</i> padasta	padoista
<i>Il.</i> pataan	patoihin
<i>Ad.</i> padalla	padoilla
<i>Abl.</i> padalta	padoilta
<i>All.</i> padalle	padoille
<i>Abes.</i> padatta	padoitta
<i>Prol.</i> [padatse]	padoitse
<i>Transl.</i> padaksi	padoiksi
<i>Ess.</i> patana	patoina
<i>Com.</i> [patane]	patoine
<i>Instr.</i> [padan]	padoin

Such words as *sota*, *war*, *korva*, *the ear*, do not change the final *a* to *o* in the plural.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> sota	sodat (30)
<i>Part.</i> sotaa	sotia
<i>Gen.</i> sodan	sotain or sotien
<i>In.</i> sodassa	sodiassa
<i>Il.</i> sotaan	sotiin
etc.	etc.

Polysyllabic nouns are declined as follows:—

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> korkea	korkeat
<i>Part.</i> korkeata } korkeaa }	korkeita } korkeoita }
<i>Gen.</i> korkean	korkeiden (-eiden) } korkeitten (-eitten) }
<i>In.</i> korkeassa	korkeissa
<i>Il.</i> korkeaan	korkeihin
etc.	etc.
<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> harakka	harakat (25)
<i>Part.</i> harakkata harakkaa	harakoita harakkoja
<i>Gen.</i> harakan	harakoiden harakoitten, harakkojen }
<i>In.</i> harakassa	harakoissa
<i>Ill.</i> harakkaan	harakkoihin
etc.	etc.

Similarly, *Isäntä*, a *father of a family*, makes *isäntää*, *isännän* (t becoming n by rule 31), *isännässä*. This word in the plur. loses its final vowel, and does not change it to o. *Isännät*, *isäntiä*, *isäntien* (-äin), *isännissä*, etc.

Comparatives whose root ends in -mpa, -mpä, change the final vowel to i in the nominative sing. ; e. g. *parempa*, *better*. Nominative *parempi*, partitive *parempaa* or *parempata*, genitive *paremman* (by rule 34), inessive *paremmassa*, etc. Plur. nominative *paremmat*, partitive *parempia*, genitive *parempien*, *parempaen*, or *parempain*, inessive *paremmissa*, illative *parempiin*, etc. All comparatives reject the final a before the i of the plural.

C. All roots ending in -i.

The root of the plural ends in the diphthong ei or short i, e. g. *kaupunki*, a *town*,

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> kaupunki	kaupungit,
<i>Part.</i> kaupunkia [ <i>rarely</i> kaupunkita]	kaupungeja or kaupungeita or kaupunkia
<i>Gen.</i> kaupungin	kaupungeiden, kaupunkien, or kaupunkien
<i>In.</i> kaupungissa	kaupungeissa
<i>El.</i> kaupungista	kaupungeista
<i>Il.</i> kaupunkiin	kaupunkiin
<i>Ad.</i> kaupungilla	kaupungeilla
<i>Abl.</i> kaupungilta	kaupungeilta
<i>All.</i> kaupungille	kaupungeille
<i>Abes.</i> kaupungitta	kaupungeitta
<i>Prol.</i> kaupungitse	kaupungeitse
<i>Transl.</i> kaupungiksi	kaupungeiksi
<i>Ess.</i> kaupunkina	kaupunkina
<i>Com.</i> [kaupunkine]	kaupunkine
<i>Instr.</i> [kaupungin]	kaupungein

Here *k* becomes *g* when the syllable is closed, and *i* in the plur. *ei* (26 and 21).

D. Dissyllables ending in the vowel *e*, preceded by *k*, *p*, *v*, a doubled consonant, or two consonants of which the last is *h*, *j*, or *m*; that is to say, roots like *reke*, *nukke*, *hanhe*, *kolme*, *pilve*, etc.

A few words coming under none of these heads also belong to this declension.

*a.* With a few exceptions the final *e* becomes *i* in the nominative sing.

*b.* The plur. stem ends in simple *i* (14), but in speaking *ei* is sometimes used in order to distinguish the sing. and plur.

*Läpe*, *a hole*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> läpi	lävet
<i>Part.</i> läpeä	läpiä
<i>Gen.</i> läven	läpien } läpein }

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>In.</i> lävessä	läviissä
<i>El.</i> lävestä	lävistä
<i>Il.</i> läpeen	läpiin
<i>Ad.</i> lävellä	lävillä
<i>Abl.</i> läveltä	läviltä
<i>All.</i> lävelle	läville
<i>Abes.</i> lävettä	lävittä
<i>Prol.</i> (lävetse)	lävitse
<i>Transl.</i> läveksi	läpiksi
<i>Ess.</i> läpenä	läpinä
<i>Com.</i> (läpene)	läpine
<i>Instr.</i> (läven)	lävin

P is weakened to v in the closed syllables (35).

*Reke, a sledge.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> reki	reet
<i>Part.</i> rekeä	rekiä
<i>Gen.</i> reen	rekien, or rekein
<i>In.</i> reessä	reissä
<i>Ill.</i> rekeen	rekiin
<i>Ess.</i> rekenä	rekinä
etc.	etc.

K is dropped by rule 28. Notice that the word takes the soft terminations,

*The Third Declension.*

The third declension has the following characteristics:—

- (1) The partitive sing. ends in *ta* or *tä* after a consonant.
- (2) The nominative sing. is never the same as the root.
- (3) The root is closed in the partitive sing. and first form of the genitive plur., and sometimes in the nominative and essive sing.

The nouns belonging to this declension may be classed under two divisions.



*First Division.*

This comprises all words belonging to this declension which have the illative sing. ending in a doubled vowel and n.

To this class belong—

I. Dissyllabic roots ending in e preceded by h, l, n, r, s, t, lt, nt, or rt, and all roots ending in -hte, -kse, -pse, -tse.

E. g. **Vete**, *water*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> <b>vesi</b>	<b>vedet</b>
<i>Part.</i> <b>vettä</b>	<b>vesiä</b>
<i>Gen.</i> <b>veden</b>	<b>vetten or vesien</b>
<i>In.</i> <b>vedessä</b>	<b>vesissä</b>
<i>El.</i> <b>vedestä</b>	<b>vesistä</b>
<i>Il.</i> <b>veteen</b>	<b>vesiin</b>
<i>Ad.</i> <b>vedellä</b>	<b>vesillä</b>
<i>Abl.</i> <b>vedeltä</b>	<b>vesiltä</b>
<i>All.</i> <b>vedelle</b>	<b>vesille</b>
<i>Abs.</i> <b>vedettä</b>	<b>vesittä</b>
<i>Prol.</i> [ <b>vedetse</b> ]	<b>vesitsee</b>
<i>Transl.</i> <b>vedeksi</b>	<b>vesiksi</b>
<i>Ess.</i> <b>vetenä</b>	<b>vesinä</b>
<i>Com.</i> ( <b>vetene</b> )	<b>vesine</b>
<i>Instr.</i> ( <b>veden</b> )	<b>vesin</b>

In the nominative sing. *te* becomes *si* by rule 37. The partitive sing. and first genitive plur. are formed from the closed root. In the majority of the cases of the sing. *vete* becomes *vede* when the root is closed by the addition of a suffix, while in the plur. *te* + *i* becomes *ti*, which changes to *si* by the rule above quoted.

The stem *miehe*, *man*, forms the nominative *mies*, partitive *miestä*, genitive *miehen*, inessive *mieheissä*, etc. Plur. *miehet*, genitive *miesten*, partitive *miehiä*, inessive *mieheissä*, etc.

Toise, *second*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> toinen	toiset
<i>Part.</i> toista	toisia
<i>Gen.</i> toisen	toisten, or toisien
<i>In.</i> toisessa	toisissa
<i>El.</i> toisesta	toisista
<i>Ill.</i> toiseen	toisiin
<i>Ad.</i> toisella	toisilla
<i>Abl.</i> toiselta	toisilta
<i>All.</i> toiselle	toisille
<i>Abes.</i> toisetta	toisitta
<i>ProL.</i> [toisetse]	toisitse
<i>Transl.</i> toiseksi	toisiksi
<i>Ess.</i> toisena, or toisna	toisina
<i>Com.</i> (toisene)	toisine
<i>Instr.</i> (toisen)	toisin

Roots ending in *se* change this termination in the nominative *o nen*. Thus *kirjase*, a little book, *venäläise*, *Russian*, *iloise*, *lad*, *vihollise*, *hostile*, form in the nominative *kirjanen*, *venä-äinen*, *iloinen*, *vihollinen*. In all such words the partitive *ing.* and first genitive *plur.* are formed from the closed root and the *essive sing.* has two forms.

II. All words of more than one syllable ending in *-e*.

E. g. Root:—*Kolmante*, *third*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> kolmas	kolmannet
<i>Part.</i> kolmatta	kolmansia
<i>Gen.</i> kolmannen	kolmansien
<i>In.</i> kolmannessa	kolmansissa
<i>El.</i> kolmannesta	kolmansista
<i>Il.</i> kolmanteen	kolmansiin
<i>Ad.</i> kolmannella	kolmansilla
<i>Abl.</i> kolmannelta	kolmansilta
<i>All.</i> kolmannelle	kolmansille
<i>Abes.</i> kolmannetta	kolmansitta
<i>ProL.</i> [kolmannetse]	kolmansitse
<i>Transl.</i> kolmanneksi	kolmansiksi

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Ess.</i> kolmantena	kolmansina
<i>Com.</i> [kolmantene]	kolmansine
<i>Instr.</i> [kolmannen]	kolmansin

Here (1) the *e* is rejected in the nominative (rule 16), and *kolmant* becomes *kolmas* (24 and 37). (2) The partitive also is formed from the shortened root (*kolmant*), and *kolmantta* becomes *kolmatta*. (3) The cases of the singular and nominative plural, where the last syllable of the root is closed, change *nt* to *nn* (rule 31). (4) The essive sing. in the form taken from the full root preserves the root entire, *kolmanna* is not used. All the cases of the plural which take *-i* reject the final *e* before that letter, and change *nt* to *ns* (rule 37).

Similarly *kannukse*, a *spur*, makes in the nominative *kannus* (rules 16 and 24). The root remains unaltered in the genitive, etc., *kannuksen*, while the partitive is *kannusta* for *kannuksta*. Similarly in the plural we have *kannukset*, genitive *kannuksien* or *kannusten*, partitive *kannuksia*.

*Kalleute*, *dearness*, makes in the nominative sing. *kalleus* (24 and 37), partitive *kalleut-ta*, illative *kalleuteen*, genitive *kalleuden*, etc.; plur. nominative *kalleudet*, first genitive *kalleutten*, but the second genitive is *kalleuksien*, and all the remaining cases are of the same type (partitive *kalleuksia*, illative *kalleuksiin*, etc.), being formed exactly as if the root was *kalleukse*.

Adjectives like *lyhyte*, *short*, *ohute*, *thin*, drop the *t* altogether between two vowels. E. g. nominative sing. *lyhyt*, partitive *lyhyttä*. But the genitive *lyhyte-n* becomes *lyhyen*, the illative *lyhyteen*, *lyhyeen*, etc.; plur. *lyhyet*, genitive *lyhyitten*, *lyhytten*, partitive *lyhyitä* (or *lyhyviä* for *lyhyiä*).

III. All superlatives in *-mpa* or *-mpä*, and all negative adjectives in *-toma*.

The termination *-mpa* is shortened to *n* (24 and 46) in the nominative, partitive, and genitive plur. (first form), and of course becomes *-mma* when the last syllable is closed in the other cases (34); *-ttoma* becomes *-ton* in the nominative sing., partitive sing., and first form of genitive plur. (46).

E. g. *suurimpa*, *very large* :—

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> suurin	suurimmat
<i>Part.</i> suurimpata, suurinta	suurimpia
<i>Gen.</i> suurimman	suurimpain, suurinten, or suurimpien
<i>In.</i> suurimmassa	suurimmissa
<i>El.</i> suurimmasta	suurimmista
<i>Il.</i> suurimpaan	suurimpiin
<i>Ad.</i> suurimmalla	suurimmilla
<i>Abl.</i> suurimmalta	suurimmilta
<i>All.</i> suurimmalle	suurimmille
<i>Abes.</i> suurimmatta	suurimmitta
<i>Prol.</i> [suurimmatse]	suurimmitse
<i>Transl.</i> suurimmaksi	suurimmiksi
<i>Ess.</i> suurimpana, or suurinna	suurimpina
<i>Com.</i> [suurimpane]	suurimpine
<i>Instr.</i> [suurimman]	suurimmin

In the plural the final *a* is lost before the *i* (9).

So also *viattoma*, *guiltless* (the termination *-ttoma* corresponds to the English termination *-less*, or the prefixes *un-*, *in-*). In *Nom.* *viaton*, *a* being lost, *m* becomes *n*, and the syllable being thus closed *tt* becomes *t*. Partitive from the same shortened root *viatonta*. Genitive, etc. *viattoman*, etc., nominative plur. *viattomat*, genitive *viatonten*, *viattomain* or *viattomien*, partitive *viattomia*, etc.

*Second Division.*

(1) The illative sing. ends in *-sen*, the illative plur. in *sin*, or *hin*.

(2) The shortened form of the root is always employed in the nominative sing., which ends in *s*, *t*, or the aspiration.

(3) The plural is formed from the shortened root, and the stem ends in a long diphthong of which the last letter is *i*.

(4) The partitive plur. after this diphthong has the termination *-ta*, *-tä*.

(5) The second genitive plur. ends in *-den* (*-tten*).

This class is composed of what are called contracted nouns (rule 47).

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> uros	uroot
<i>Part.</i> urosta	uroita
<i>Gen.</i> uroon	urosten, uroiden, uroitten
<i>In.</i> uroossa	uroissa
<i>El.</i> uroosta	uroista
<i>Il.</i> uroosen	uroihin, uroisin
<i>Ad.</i> uroolla	uroilla
<i>Abl.</i> uroolta	uroilta
<i>All.</i> uroolle	uroille
<i>Abs.</i> urootta	uroitta
<i>Transl.</i> urooksi	uroiksi
<i>Prol.</i> [urootse]	uroitse
<i>Ess.</i> uroona or urosna,	uroina
<i>Com.</i> [uroone]	uroine
<i>Instr.</i> [uroon]	uroin
<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> vieras	vieraat
<i>Part.</i> vierasta	vieraita
<i>Gen.</i> vieraan	vierasten, vieraiden, vieraitten
<i>In.</i> vierassa	vieraisa
<i>El.</i> vierasta	vieraista
<i>Il.</i> vierseen	vieraihin, vieraisin

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Ad.</i> vieraalla	vierailla
<i>Abl.</i> vieraalta	vierailta
<i>All.</i> vieraalle	vieraille
<i>Abes.</i> vieraatta	vieraitta
<i>Transl.</i> vieraaksi	vieraiksi
<i>Prol.</i> [vieraatse]	vieraitse
<i>Ess.</i> vieraana or vierasna	vieraina
<i>Com.</i> [vieraane]	vieraine
<i>Instr.</i> [vieraan]	vierain

In poetry we also find a declension: uros, vieras, genitive urohon, vierahan, etc., illative urohosen, vierahasen, plur. urohot, vierahat, urohissa, vierahissa, etc., so that it is clear the roots are uroso, vierasa, being weakened.

Analogously are declined such words as *terve*, *healthily*, *kevät*, *spring*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> terve	terveet
<i>Part.</i> tervettä	terveitä
<i>Gen.</i> terveen	tervetten, terveiden
<i>Il.</i> terveeseen	terveisin or terveihin
<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> kevät	keväät
<i>Part.</i> kevättä	keväitä
<i>Gen.</i> kevään	kevätten, keväiden
<i>Il.</i> kevääseen	keväisin, or keväihin

Stems *ikehe*, a *yoke*, *okaha*, *point* or *prickle*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> ies or ijes	ikeet
<i>Part.</i> iesta, or ijestä	ikeitä
<i>Gen.</i> ikeen	iesten, ikeiden, ikeitten
<i>In.</i> ikeessä	ikeissä
<i>Il.</i> ikeeseen	ikeisin, or ikeihin
<i>Ess.</i> iesnä, ikeenä	ikeinä
<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> oas (rule 27)	okaat
<i>Part.</i> oasta	okaita
<i>Gen.</i> okaan	oasten, okaiden, okaitten

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>In.</i> okaassa	okaissa
<i>Ill.</i> okaasen	okaisin, or okaihin
<i>Ess.</i> oasna, okaans	okaina

Vapaa, free, koree, beautiful (for korea).

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> vapaa	vapaat
<i>Part.</i> vapaata	vapaita
<i>Gen.</i> vapaan	vapaiden, vapaitten
<i>In.</i> vapaassa	vapaissa
<i>Il.</i> vapaasen	vapaisin, vapaihin
<i>Ess.</i> vapaana	vapaina
<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> koree	koreet
<i>Part.</i> koreeta	koreita
<i>Gen.</i> koreen	koreiden, koreitten
<i>In.</i> koreessa	koreissa
<i>Il.</i> koreesen	koreisin, koreihin
<i>Ess.</i> koreena	koreina

Participles whose nominative ends in *nut* or *nyt* (that is past active participles), like *oppinut*, *lyönyt*, form the genitive, inessive, etc., from a root ending in *nehe*, contracted *nee*; but the nominative and partitive sing., and one form of the essive sing. and genitive plur. are formed from a root ending in *ute*, *yte*, which loses its final vowel.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> oppinut	oppineet
<i>Part.</i> oppinutta	oppineita
<i>Gen.</i> oppineen	oppinutten, oppineiden
<i>In.</i> oppineessa	oppineissa
<i>El.</i> oppineesta	oppineista
<i>Il.</i> oppineesen	oppineisin
<i>Ad.</i> oppineella	oppineilla
<i>Abl.</i> oppineelta	oppineilta
<i>All.</i> oppineelle	oppineille
<i>Abes.</i> oppineetta	oppineitta
<i>Prol.</i> oppineetse	oppineitse
<i>Transl.</i> oppineeksi	oppineiksi

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Ess.</i> oppineena or oppinunna	oppineina
<i>Com.</i> (oppineene)	oppineine
<i>Instr.</i> (oppineen)	oppinein

So also *lyönyt*, partitive *lyönyttä*, genitive *lyöneen*, inessive *lyöneessä*, essive *lyöneenä*, or *lyönynnä*; plur. nominative *lyöneet*, partitive *lyöneitä*, genitive *lyönyttien* or *lyöneiden*, etc.

#### *Compound Nouns.*

Finnish, especially the modern literary dialect, abounds in compound nouns, in which the last word of the compound is defined by that which precedes it, so that the first word is practically an adjective. Thus in *pääkaupunki*, a *capital*, *kaupunki* means a town, and the word *pää*, a *head*, describes what sort of town is intended. So also *rautatie*, a *railway*, from *rauta*, *iron*, and *tie*, a *road*; *tullihuone*, a *custom house*; *puutarha*, a *garden* (*puu*, a *tree*, *tarha*, an *enclosure*), *kirkkotarha*, a *churchedyard* (*kirkko*, *church*, *tarha*, *enclosure*). Sometimes the first word is an adjective, as *omatunto*, *conscience*, from *oma*, *own*, and *tunto*, *feeling*. This is written as one word, because *omatunto* conveys a different meaning from the separate words *oma* and *tunto*.

When a compound is made up of more than two words, all but the last may be regarded as a single word qualifying the last, and then be decomposed in their turn. For instance in *ylioppilaskirjasto*, *University students' library*, *kirjasto*, *library*, is qualified by *ylioppilas*, describing what kind of a library is meant, and in this word *ylioppilas*, *oppilas*, *student*, is particularised by the addition of *yli*. Similarly *isänmaanrakkkaus*, *patriotism*, is composed of *isänmaa*, *fatherland*, and *rakkkaus*, *love*, and *isänmaa* again is composed of *isä*, *father*, and *maa*, *land*.



Generally the first word of a compound is used in the nominative case. *Sairashuone*, a *hospital* (stem *sairaha*). Frequently, however, it is in the genitive, this case being either (a) descriptive, as in *maantie*, *highroad*, literally *road of the land*: *talonpoika*, *peasant*, literally *son of a farm*; (b) subjective, that is to say, if the compound were developed into a phrase the word in the genitive would become the subject, as *kuunvalo*, *moonlight*; (c) objective, that is to say, if the compound were developed into a phrase the word in the genitive would become the object, *hatuntekijä*, a *hatmaker*.

More rarely other cases are used, as *toimeentulo*, *subsistence*, *kuntoonpano*, *arrangement*, *accomplishment*.

As a rule, only the last word of a compound is declined, the preceding member remaining unaffected by inflection. But if the first member is an adjective, then both parts of the word receive inflections, e.g. *vieras mies*, a *stranger*, forms the genitive *vieraanmiehen*, inessive *vieraassamiehessä*, etc. But *vierasmiehen* is not wrong.

## THE ADJECTIVE.

Adjectives are declined exactly like substantives, and like them have no gender.

Besides declension they are susceptible of inflections indicating the comparative and superlative degrees.

I. The Comparative is formed by adding to the root of the positive *-mpa* or *-mpä*. *Huono*, *bad*, *huonompa*, *worse*; *paksu*, *fat*, *paksumpa*, *fatter*. Root, *iloise*, *gay* (nominative of positive *iloinen*), comparative *iloisempa*.

If a dissyllabic root end in *a* or *ä*, that vowel becomes *e* before the termination *mpa*. *Vanha*, *old*, *vanhempa* (13).

It is important to note that the suffix *-mpa* is added to the root, and not to the nominative of the positive.

The stem thus formed is declined with the usual suffixes, after the models given above: *mpa* in the nominative sing. becomes *mpi*, and in the cases where the syllable is closed *mma*.

II. The Superlative is formed by adding to the root of the positive the suffix *impa*. Before this suffix the vowels *a*, *ä*, *e*, *i* are rejected, and *aa*, *ää*, *ee*, become *ai*, *äi*, *ei*. Thus *iso*, *great*, *isoimpa*: *huono*, *bad*, *huonoimpa*; but *köyhä*, *köyhimpä*, *valkea*, *valkeimpa*, etc.

The root thus obtained is declined after the third declension. Notice the difference in the declension of comparatives and superlatives. In the comparative the final *a* becomes *i* in the nominative sing., in the superlative it is lost and *mp* becomes *n* by rule 2.

Comparative stem *suurempa*. Superlative stem *suurimpa*.

		<i>Sing.</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	<i>suurempi</i>	<i>suurin</i>
<i>Gen.</i>	<i>suuremman</i>	<i>suurimman</i>
<i>Part.</i>	<i>suurempaa (ta)</i>	<i>suurimpaa, suurinta</i>
<i>Ill.</i>	<i>suurempaan</i>	<i>suurimpaan</i>
<i>Ess.</i>	<i>suurempana</i>	<i>suurimpana, suurinna</i>
	etc.	etc.
		<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	<i>suuremmat</i>	<i>suurimmat</i>
<i>Gen.</i>	[ <i>suurempaen</i> ] <i>suurempain</i>	<i>suurinten, suurimpain</i>
		<i>suurimpien</i>
<i>Part.</i>	<i>suurempia</i>	<i>suurimpia</i>
	etc.	etc.

Examples of the formation of the comparative and superlative.

<i>Positive.</i>	<i>Comparative.</i>	<i>Superlative.</i>
<i>vanha, old</i>	<i>vanhempi</i> (11)	<i>vanhin</i>
<i>raska, raw</i>	<i>rasempi</i> (28, 9)	<i>rasin</i> (28)
<i>vapaa, free</i>	<i>vapaampi</i>	<i>vapain</i>
<i>lihava, fat</i>	<i>lihavampi</i>	<i>lihavin</i>

<i>Positive.</i>	<i>Comparative.</i>	<i>Superlative.</i>
köyhä, <i>poor</i>	köyhempi (11)	köyhin
terävä, <i>sharp</i>	terävämpi	terävin
suruinen, <i>sorrowful</i>	suruisempi	suruisin
lyhyt, <i>short</i>	lyhyempi	lyhyin
aulis, <i>liberal</i>	auliimpi	auliin
paksu, <i>fat</i>	paksumpi	paksuin
mieto, <i>mild</i>	miedompi (32)	miedoin
rikas, <i>rich</i>	rikkaampi	rikkain
kaunis, <i>beautiful</i>	kauniimpi	kauniin, kaunein
oppinut, <i>learned</i>	oppineempi	oppinein

The following words are irregular, the comparative and superlative being formed from different roots to the positive.

<i>Positive.</i>	<i>Comparative.</i>	<i>Superlative.</i>
hyvä, <i>good</i>	parempi	paras, parhain (root <i>paraa</i> )
paljo, <i>much</i>	enempi	enin
pitkä, <i>long</i>	pitempi	pisin (as if from root <i>pitä</i> )
moni, <i>many</i>	useampi	usein

**Molemmat**, *both*, is an isolated comparative form.

The following adjectives are not declined or compared, but remain invariable in all cases.—*Aika*, *strong*; *aimo*, *good*; *kelpo*, *worthy*; *eri*, *different*; *koko*, *all*; *ensi*, *next*; *viime*, *last*; *pikku*, *little*. **Kaikki**, *all*, is not usually changed in the nominative plural, but otherwise is declined.

#### FORMATION OF SUBSTANTIVES AND ADJECTIVES.

Some substantives and adjectives are primitive—that is to say, they consist of roots which cannot be further analysed, and to which the case suffixes are directly attached. But a great number of words are not mere roots, but roots with additional syllables which modify the meaning of the original root.

The following are the principal syllables so added to roots to form nouns and adjectives.

## SUBSTANTIVES.

I. The following suffixes are used to form substantives from verbs.

**-ja.** A factitive suffix, that is to say, denoting the doer of the action denoted by the root. *Luoja, the creator* (*luo, to create*). *Kalastaja, a fisherman*. When a root ends in *e* this letter is generally changed to *i* before the suffix **-ja**. *Teke, to make, tekijä, a maker*; *luke, to read, lukija, a reader*. This suffix is also found in the forms **-jame** (nominative **-jan** or **-jain**), **-jaise** (**-jainen**), **-jaa**.

**-ri** has the same meaning as **-ja**: *mylläri, a miller, juomari, a drunkard, petturi, a deceiver*. (This is really a foreign termination from the Swedish **-re**.)

**-ma** (the termination of the third infinitive) expresses an action or the result of an action. *Sanoma, report* ("a speaking"), *elämä, life, kuolema, death*.

**-mise** (nominative **minen**, the termination of the fourth infinitive) expresses a continuous action, or an action in an abstract sense. *Laulaminen, singing, eläminen, living*.

**-nto, -nta** (chiefly poetical), **-nti** (added to monosyllabic roots) express an action or a state arising from an action. *Luonto, nature* (from *luo, to create*), *uskonto, religion* ("believing," from *uskoa, to believe*), *tuonti, bringing to, or importation, vienti, bringing away, from or exportation, laulanta, singing*.

**o (ö)** and **u (y)** (before which the last vowel of the root is rejected) form abstract nouns denoting action. *Muisto, memory, makso, payment, tulo, arrival, lähtö, departure, luku, reading, itku, weeping, maksu, payment*.

**-okse** or **-ukse** (nominative **-os** or **-us**) also form abstract nouns expressing an action, and are specially added to trisyllabic verbs ending in **-ta**. *Valmistus, preparation, har-*

*joitus, practice, vastaus, answer.* The same suffix is sometimes found in combination with *-ma* (*-ma + ukse = mukse*) *juopumus, drunkenness.*

*-io* has the same meaning. *Huomio, attention, palkkio, a reward.*

*-ee* (original stem *ehe*, closed form *e'*) expresses action or the product of action: *puhe, conversation, kanne, accusation.*

*-ine* (nominative *-in*) expresses the instrument with which an action is performed. *Avain, a key* ('the opener'), *uistin, a fishhook, viskain, anything used to throw things away, e. g. a bucket; viskin* is also found.

II. The following suffixes are used to form derivative nouns from other nouns.

*-se, -ise* (nominative *-nen, -inen*) are used to form family names, like the Russian terminations *-овъ, -евъ, Peltonen, Koskinen, Karhunen, etc.*

*-ttare* (nominative *-tar*) is a similar affix for feminine names. *Karhutar, Ilmatar (daughter of the air), Manalatar (daughter of death).*

*-laine* (nominative *-lainen*) is used to form designations of nationality. *Suomalainen, a Finn; Ruotsalainen, a Swede; Venäläinen, a Russian; Englantilainen, an Englishman.*

The following suffixes are used to form diminutives—

*-se* (nominative *-nen*), or *ise* (nominative *-inen*). *Kirjanen, emonen, poikanen.*

*-lo.* *Purtilo, kotelo.*

*-ue, ye* (originally *ute, yte*; nominative *-ut -yt*). *Poiut, kuuhut, päivyt, päähyt.*

*-kka, -kaise* (nominative *kainen*). *-kke* (original form *-kkehe, nominative ke'*). *Annikka, mullikka, lapsukainen, silmäke.*

The following terminations have a local significance—

**-kko** or **-ikko** indicates a place where anything is found in a quantity; *rapakko*, a muddy place; *kivikko*, a heap of stones; *koivikko*, a birchwood; *kuusikko*, firwood.

**-la**, added to the name of a person, expresses the place where that person lives; *pappila*, a priest's house; *setälä*, uncle's house; *tuonela*, the house of death.

**-nko** or **-nte** is used to form local substantives. *Alanko*, a low-lying place (*Alankomaat*, the Netherlands), *ylänkö*, a height; *tasanko*, a plane.

Suffixes denoting a collection of objects are—

**-sto**, generally used of inanimate objects; *kirjasto*, a library; *laivasto*, a fleet; *hongisto*, pinewood.

**-use** (original form *uehe*, nominative *-ue'*), generally used of animate objects; *matkue*, *laivue*, *seurue*.

III. Names of abstract qualities are formed from adjectives with the suffix **-ute**, **-yte** (nominative **-us**, **-ys**). Before this suffix *a*, *ä*, *e* are changed to *u* or *y*, and form a long vowel; *hyvyys*, virtue (*hyvä*); *rakkaus* (from stem *rakkaa*); *arkuus*, cowardice; *turhuus*, vanity. If a root ends in *i* or *ii* this vowel generally becomes *e* in dissyllabic roots, and *u* in polysyllabic. *Kalleus*, but *naapuruuus*, *kumppanuus*.

### ADJECTIVAL TERMINATIONS.

The commonest adjectival suffix is **-ise** (nominative **-inen**), which is added usually to nouns. *Aamu*, morning, *aamuinen*, early; *kulta*, gold; *kultainen*, golden. This suffix is sometimes added to cases, especially the essive; *yksinäinen*, ominainen, luonteinen. Similarly the very common suffix **-llise** (nominative **-llinen**) is the result of adding *ise* to the adessive or allative—*maallinen*, *rahallinen*, *vihollinen*.

-*ttoma* (nominative *ton*) is a caritive suffix signifying without or deprived of (cf. the English *-less*); *isätön*, *fatherless*; *rahaton*, *moneyless*. It is frequently added to the third infinitive of verbs, e. g. *kuolematon*, *immortal*.

-*kkaha* (nominative *-kkas*) is the exact contrary of this last suffix, and signifies progressing or provided with; *rahakas*, *having much money*; *voimakas*, *strong*.

-*isa* and -*va* have much the same meaning as *-kkaha*; *kuuluisa*, *glorious*; *kalaisa*, *rich in fish*; *lihava*, *fat*; *terävä*, *sharp*.

-*se*, -*kaise*, and -*hka*, -*hko* are used to form adjectival diminutives; *lyhykäinen*, *short* (Russian *коротенький*), *pitkähkö*, *longish*.

The suffix *-mainen* forms adjectives meaning like, or rather; English *-ish*; *lapsimainen*, *childish*; *poikamainen*, *boyish*; *hyvämainen*, *pretty good*.

### THE NUMERALS.

The following are the numerals, cardinal and ordinal, given in the nominative sing.

<i>Card.</i>	<i>Ord.</i>
1. yksi	ensimäinen or ensimmäinen
2. kaksi	toinen
3. kolme	kolmas
4. neljä	neljäs
5. viisi	viides
6. kuusi	kuudes
7. seitsemän	seitsemäs
8. kahdeksan	kahdeksäs
9. yhdeksän	yhdeksäs
10. kymmenen	kymmenes

The numbers from 11 to 20 are formed by adding *toista*, that is the partitive of *toinen*, to the corresponding number below 10.

<i>Card.</i>	<i>Ord.</i>
11. yksitoista	yhdestoista
12. kaksitoista	kahdestoista
13. kolmetoista	kolmastoista
14. neljätoista	neljästoista
15. viisitoista	viidestoista
16. kuusitoista	kuudestoista
17. seitsemätoista	seitsemästoista
18. kahdeksantoista	kahdeksastoista
19. yhdeksätoista	yhdeksästoista
20. kaksikymmentä	kahdeskymmenes

(that is, two tens).

The numbers between twenty and thirty are formed analogously to those between 10 and 20, that is to say, the numbers 11 to one, two, three, etc., are prefixed to the partitive case of *olmas*.

21. yksikolmatta	yhdeskolmatta
22. kaksikolmatta	kahdeskolmatta
23. kolmekolmatta	kolmaskolmatta
24. neljäkolmatta	neljäskolmatta
25. viisikolmatta	viideskolmatta

etc., till

30. kolmekymmentä	kolmaskymmenes
-------------------	----------------

and then as before the numerals up to ten prefixed to the partitive of *neljäs*, *fourth*, e. g.

36. kuusineljättä	kuudesneljättä
37. seitsemäneljättä	seitsemäneljättä
38. kahdeksaneljättä	kahdeksaneljättä
39. yhdeksäneljättä	yhdeksäneljättä
40. neljäkymmentä	neljäskymmenes
41. yksiviidettä	yhdesviidettä

and so on till

50. viisikymmentä	viideskymmenes
51. yksikuudetta	yhdeskuudetta
etc.	etc.
60. kuusikymmentä	kuudeskymmenes
65. viisiseitsemättä	viidesseitsemättä
70. seitsemänkymmentä	seitsemänkymmenes



<i>Card.</i>	<i>Ord.</i>
75. viisikahdeksatta	viideskahdeksatta
80. kahdeksankymmentä	kahdeksakymmenes
85. viisiyhdeksättä	viidesyhdeksättä
90. yhdeksänkymmentä	yhdeksäkymmenes
100. sata	sadas
200. kaksi sataa	kahdes sadas
300. kolme sataa	kolmas sadas
400. neljä sataa	neljäs sadas
500. viisi sataa	viides sadas
600. kuusisataa	kundes sadas
700. seitsemän sataa	seitsemäs sadas
800. kahdeksan sataa	kahdeksas sadas
900. yhdeksän sataa	yhdeksäs sadas
1000. tuhat	tuhannes
2000. kaksi tuhatta	kahdestuhannes
etc.	etc.
1,000,000. miljlona	miljlonas
2,000,000. kaksimiljlona	kahdesmiljlonas

The numbers between the hundreds are formed simply by placing the required number after *sata*, e. g.

101 *satayksi*, *satayhdes*; 221 *kaksi sataa yksikolmatta*, and similarly 4872 will be *neljätuhatta kahdeksan sataa kaksikahdeksatta*.

The Finnish system of numbers, though apparently difficult to understand, is really very simple when the principle is once grasped. Starting with the ten simple numbers, all the numbers up to a hundred which are multiples of ten are expressed in the form two tens, three tens, etc., *kaksikymmentä*, *kolmekymmentä*. The word *kymmenen* is put in the participle, because, as will be seen in the syntax, a number requires this case after it. The interval between 10 and 20 is regarded as a set of ten, and 11 is 1 of the second set of ten<sup>1</sup> (the first set being from 1 to 10), similarly from 20 to 30 is the third set of

<sup>1</sup> In the Bible and old Finnish are found such forms as *kaksitoistakymmentä*,

ten, and 27 is 7 of the third set of ten. Accordingly these intermediate numbers are expressed by a unit followed by the partitive case of an ordinal number, *viisiyhdeksättä*, five of the ninth (set of ten), that is, 85. An exactly similar way of calculating can be traced in the Russian method of computing time, e. g. ten minutes past six is represented by

*Десять минутъ седьмого.* Ten minutes of the seventh (hour).

The system of numeration just explained is at present giving way to another form borrowed from Russian and Swedish, where the numbers above twenty are formed exactly as in ordinary European languages. 21 is *kaksikymmentä yksi*, 37 *kolmekymmentä seitsemän*, 74 *seitsemänkymmentä neljä*, and so on with all the others. Though the older method is still employed in the interior of Finland, the other is almost universally employed where the Finns come much into contact with strangers, which is not wonderful, for such forms as *yksikolmatta*, though more primitive in Finnish than *kaksikymmentä yksi*, and agreeable to the genius of the language, are difficult for foreigners to understand, without a good deal of explanation.

The numbers up to ten are declined exactly like substantives.

**Yksi** has its root *yhte*. Partitive *yhte*, genitive *yhden* (31), inessive *yhdessä*, etc., essive *yhtenä*.

**Kaksi**, root *kahte*, partitive *kahta*, genitive *kahden* (31), inessive *kahdessa*, etc., essive *kahtena*.

**Kolme**, root and nominative (N.B.—Nominative is not *kolmi*) *kolmea*, genitive *kolmen*, *kolmessa*, etc.

**Neljä**, partitive *neljää*, genitive *neljän*, etc.

**Viisi**, root *viite*, partitive *viittä*, genitive *viiden* (31), inessive *viidessä*, etc., essive *viitenä*.

**Kuusi**, root *kuute*, partitive *kuutta*, genitive *kuuden* (31), etc.

**Seitsemän**, partitive *seitsetä*, *seitsemää*, genitive *seitsemän*, inessive *seitsemässä*.

**Kahdeksan**, partitive **kahdeksaa**, genitive **kahdeksan**, inessive **kahdeksassa**.

**Yhdeksän**, partitive **yhdeksää**, genitive **yhdeksän**, inessive **yhdeksässä**.

**Kymmenän**, **kymmenen**, partitive **kymmenää**, **kymmentä**; genitive **kymmenän**, **kymmenen**; inessive **kymmenässä**, **kymmenessä**.

The ordinals are also declined exactly as substantives.

**Ensimmäinen**, root **ensimäise**, partitive **ensimäistä**, genitive **ensimmäisen**, etc.

**Toinen**, root **toise**, partitive **toista**, genitive **toisen**, etc.

**Kolmas**, root **kolmante**, partitive **kolmatta**, genitive **kolmannen (30)**.

**Neljäs**, **neljänte**, partitive **neljättä**, genitive **neljännen**.

**Viides**, **viidente**, partitive **viidettä**, genitive **viidennen**.

**Kuudes**, root **kuudente**, partitive **kuudetta**, genitive **kuudennen**.

**Seitsemäs**, root **seitsemänte**, partitive **seitsemättä**, genitive **seitsemännän**.

**Kahdeksan**, root **kahdeksante**, partitive **kahdeksatta**, genitive **kahdeksannen**.

**Yhdeksän**, root **yhdeksänte**, partitive **yhdeksättä**, genitive **yhdeksännän**.

In the composite forms **ensimmäinen** and **toinen** are replaced by **yhdes** and **kahdes**.

**Sata** is declined like any other noun in *a*; **tuhat** comes from the stem **tuhante**, and makes genitive sing. **tuhannen**, genitive plur. **tuhansien**, partitive sing. **tuhatta**, partitive plur. **tuhansia**.

In both ordinal and cardinal numbers expressing any multiple of ten, e. g. 70, 120, 2000, all the words forming the expression are declined quite regularly except the nominative of cardinals, where the partitive is employed in the second number, e. g.

Viisi sataa 500 (here the word *sataa* is in the partitive), partitive *viittä sataa*, genitive *viiden sadan*, inessive *viidessä sadassa*, etc.

Kuudes-Tuhannes, 6000th. Partitive *kuudetta tuhatta*, genitive *kuudennen tuhannenen*.

But in words designating numbers *between the tens*, and consisting of a simple number and a number in the partitive case only, the first number is declined and the second remains in the partitive, e.g. *yksitoista*, makes *yhdentoista*, *yhdellätoista*, and similarly the others.

The fractional numbers (with the exception of *puoli*, a *half*) are formed by adding *-kse* to the corresponding ordinal; the noun is then declined like number.

$\frac{1}{2}$  *puoli*,  $\frac{1}{3}$  *kolmannes*,  $\frac{1}{4}$  *neljännes*,  $\frac{1}{5}$  *viidennes*,  $\frac{1}{6}$  *kuudennes*,  $\frac{1}{7}$  *seitsemännes*,  $\frac{1}{8}$  *kahdeksännes*,  $\frac{1}{9}$  *yhdeksännes*,  $\frac{1}{10}$  *kymmennenes*,  $\frac{1}{11}$  *kaksikymmentäyhdenes*,  $\frac{1}{100}$  *sadannes*, etc. So also  $\frac{2}{3}$  *kaksi kolmannesta*,  $\frac{3}{7}$  *kolme seitsemännestä*. These numbers can also be formed with the ordinals, and the word *osa*, a *part*. *Neljäs osa*, *the fourth part*, or  $\frac{1}{4}$ . Numbers like  $1\frac{1}{2}$ ,  $2\frac{1}{2}$ , are expressed as *a half of the second*, *a half of the third*, etc., *puoli-toista*, *puoli-kolmatta*.

The distributive numbers are *yksittäin*, *one by one*; *kaksittäin*, *two by two*; *kolmittain*, etc.

*Yksinäinen*, *simple*; *kaksinainen*, *double*; *kolminainen*, *triple*; *nelinäinen*, *fourfold*, etc.

## PRONOUNS.

The personal pronouns are declined almost exactly like nouns.

First person *minä*; the singular is formed from the root *minu*, the plural from the root *me*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> minä	me
<i>Part.</i> minua	meitä
<i>Gen.</i> minun	meidän
<i>In.</i> minussa	meissä
<i>El.</i> minusta	meistä
<i>Il.</i> minuun	meihin
<i>Ad.</i> minulla	meillä
<i>Abl.</i> minulta	meiltä
<i>All.</i> minulle	meille
<i>Abes.</i> minutta	meittä
<i>Transl.</i> minuksi	meiksi
<i>Ess.</i> minuna	meinä

The other cases are not used.

Second person, *sinä*, root in *sing.* *sinu*, in *plur.* *te*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> sinä	te
<i>Part.</i> sinua	teitä
<i>Gen.</i> sinun	teidän
<i>In.</i> sinussa	teissä
<i>El.</i> sinusta	teistä
<i>Il.</i> sinuun	teihin
<i>Ad.</i> sinulla	teillä
<i>Abl.</i> sinulta	teiltä
<i>All.</i> sinulle	teille
<i>Abes.</i> sinutta	teittä
<i>Transl.</i> sinuksi	teiksi
<i>Ess.</i> sinuna	teinä

Third person *hän*, *he*, *she*, or *it*, there being no distinction of genders. Root in *sing.* *häne*, in *plur.* *he*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> hän	he
<i>Part.</i> häntä	heitä
<i>Gen.</i> hänen	heidän
<i>In.</i> hänessä	heissä
<i>El.</i> hänestä	heistä
<i>Il.</i> häneen	heihin
<i>Ad.</i> hänellä	heillä
<i>Abl.</i> häneltä	heiltä

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>All.</i> hänelle	heille
<i>Abes.</i> hänettä	heittä
<i>Transl.</i> häneksi	heiksi
<i>Ess.</i> hänenä	heinä

There are also found accusative forms ending in -t: *minut*, plur. *meidät*, *sinut*, plur. *teidät*, *hänet*, plur. *heidät*. The forms in -n are also used as accusatives.

In poetry and some dialects shortened forms are also found: first person nominative *ma* or *mä*, partitive *mua*, genitive *mun* adessive *mulla*, ablative *multa*, allative *mulle*. Second, person *sa* or *sä*, *sun*, *sua*, *sulla*, *sulta*, *sulle*. Third person *hällä*, *hältä*, *hälle*. For the part. *minuta*, *sinuta* are found in the Bible, and *milma*, *silma* in poetry.

*Mie*, *sie*, *hä*, are used in the Wiburg dialect.

#### *Possessive Pronouns.*

The possessive pronouns are usually expressed by suffixes added to nouns.

These suffixes are:—

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1st pers. -ni	-mme
2nd „ -si <sup>1</sup>	-nne
3rd „ -nsa or -nsä	-nsa or nsä

(1) To form the nominative sing. of a noun with a possessive suffix the suffix is added to the *root*. *Käsi*, a *hand*, but *kätäni*, *my hand*; *kysymys*, a *question*, *kysymyksesi*, *thy question*, because the roots are *käte*, *kysymykse*.

(2) In the other cases the suffix is added after the termination, but should a case end in a consonant, that consonant is rejected before the suffix. *Veljeni*, *my brothers*, because *veljetni* is euphonicly disagreeable.

(3) The possessive suffix does not cause the consonants of the

<sup>1</sup> This suffix frequently loses its vowel and becomes simple s.

root to be weakened : *e. g.* *pelto*, genitive *pellon*, but with suffix *peltomme*, etc. *Kirkko*, *church*, *kirkon*, but *kirkkonsa*.

But *d* in the genitive plur. remains and does not become *t* : *e. g.* *maidensa*.

(4) The term of the translative before a pronoun-suffix is *-kse* not *-ksi*.

*E. g.* *Tapa*, with suffix *-ni*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> <i>tapani</i>	<i>tapani</i>
<i>Part.</i> <i>tapaani</i>	<i>tapojeni or tapaini</i>
<i>Gen.</i> <i>tapani</i>	<i>tapojani (7)</i>
<i>In.</i> <i>tavassani</i>	<i>tavoissani (7, 35, 36)</i>
<i>Il.</i> <i>tapaani</i>	<i>tapoihini</i>
<i>Ad.</i> <i>tavallani</i>	<i>tavoillani</i>
and so the allative, etc.	etc., etc.
<i>Transl.</i> <i>tavakseni</i>	<i>tavoikseni</i>
<i>Ess.</i> <i>tapanani</i>	<i>tapoinani</i>

Here the genitive *sing.* *tapani* is for *tavanni*, the nominative *sing.* for *tavatni*, *tapaani* in the illative for *tapaanni*. The *p* is weakened to *v* only where the *case* inflexion requires it. The declension of the second person *sing.* is exactly analogous, only *-si* is affixed instead of *-ni*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> <i>tapasi</i>	<i>tapasi</i>
<i>Part.</i> <i>tapaasi</i>	<i>tapojasi</i>
<i>Gen.</i> <i>tapasi</i>	<i>tapojesi or tapaisi</i>
<i>In.</i> <i>tavassasi</i>	<i>tavoissasi</i>
<i>El.</i> <i>tavastasi</i>	<i>tavoistasi</i>
<i>Il.</i> <i>tapaasi</i>	<i>tapoihisi</i>
<i>Ad.</i> <i>tavallasi</i>	<i>tavoillasi</i>
<i>Abl.</i> <i>tavaltasi</i>	<i>tavoiltasi</i>
<i>All.</i> <i>tavalleasi</i>	<i>tavoillesi</i>
<i>Abes.</i> <i>tavattasi</i>	<i>tavoittasi</i>
<i>Transl.</i> <i>tavaksesi</i>	<i>tavoiksesi</i>
<i>Ess.</i> <i>tapanasi</i>	<i>tapoinasi</i>
<i>Com.</i> <i>tapanesi</i>	<i>tapoinesi</i>

For the declension of the first person plur. -mme is suffixed to all the cases.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> tapamme	tapamme
<i>Part.</i> tapaamme	tapojamme
<i>Gen.</i> tapamme	tapojemme, tapaimme
<i>In.</i> tavassamme	tavoissamme
<i>El.</i> tavastamme	tavoistamme
<i>Ill.</i> tapaamme	tapoihimme
<i>Ad.</i> tavallamme	tavoillamme
<i>Abl.</i> tavaltamme	tavoiltamme
<i>All.</i> tavallemme	tavoillemme
<i>Abes.</i> tavattamme	tavoittamme
<i>Transl.</i> tavaksemme	tavoiksemme
<i>Ess.</i> tapanamme	tapoinamme
<i>Com.</i> tapanemme	tapoinemme

The second person is declined exactly like the above, only -nne and not -mme is suffixed.

The third person of the sing. and plur. alike takes the suffix -nsa (-nsä), which in all the cases except the nominative, genitive, and partitive is optionally shortened to n, before which the preceding vowel is doubled.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> tapansa	tapansa
<i>Part.</i> tapaansa	tapojansa, tapojaan
<i>Gen.</i> tapansa	tapojensa, tapojeen, tapainsa
<i>In.</i> tavassansa, tavassaan	tavoissansa, tavoissaan
<i>El.</i> tavastansa, tavastaan	tavoistansa, tavoistaan
<i>Ill.</i> tapaansa, [tapahaan]	tapoihinsa, [tapoihiin]
<i>Ad.</i> tavallansa, tavallaan	tavoillansa, tavoillaan
<i>Abl.</i> tavaltansa, tavaltaan	tavoiltansa, tavoiltaan
<i>All.</i> tavallensa, tavalleen	tavoillensa, tavoilleen
<i>Abes.</i> tavattansa, tavattaan	tavoittansa, tavoittaen
<i>Transl.</i> tavaksensa, tavakseen	tavoiksensa, tavoikseen
<i>Ess.</i> tapanansa, tapanaan	tapoinansa, tapoinaan
<i>Com.</i> tapanensa, tapaneen	tapoinensa, tapoineen



*Demonstrative Pronouns.*

The demonstrative pronouns are *tämä*, *this*, *tuo*, *that*, and *se*, *it* or *that*. The corresponding plur. roots are *nämä*, *nuo* or *noi*, and *ne*.

**Tämä:—**

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> tämä	nämät or nämä
<i>Part.</i> tätä	näitä
<i>Gen.</i> tämän	näiden, näitten
<i>In.</i> tässä	näissä
<i>El.</i> tästä	näistä
<i>Il.</i> tähän	näihin
<i>Ad.</i> täällä	näillä
<i>Abl.</i> tältä	näiltä
<i>All.</i> tälle	näille
<i>Abes.</i> tättä	näittä
<i>Transl.</i> täksi	näiksi
<i>Ess.</i> tänä	näinä
<i>Instr.</i> tämän	näin

**Tuo:—**

<i>Nom.</i> tuo	nuot or nuo
<i>Part.</i> tuota	noita
<i>Gen.</i> tuon	noiden, noitten
<i>In.</i> tuossa	noissa
<i>El.</i> tuosta	noista
<i>Il.</i> tuohon	noihin
<i>Ad.</i> tuolla	noilla
<i>Abl.</i> tuolta	noilta
<i>All.</i> tuolle	noille
<i>Abes.</i> tuotta	noitta
<i>Transl.</i> tuoksi	noiksi
<i>Ess.</i> tuona	noina
<i>Instr.</i> tuon	noin

In poetry are found such forms as *tää* for *tämä*, *nää* for *nämä*, *tään* or *tän* for *tämän*.

**Se.**—The nominative, genitive, and instructive sing. are formed from the root *se*, the remaining cases of the singular

from *si*, except the inessive and elative which are irregular. The nominative plur. is *ne*. The remaining cases from the root *nii*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> <i>se</i>	<i>ne or net</i>
<i>Part.</i> <i>sitä</i>	<i>niitä</i>
<i>Gen.</i> <i>sen</i>	<i>niiden, niitten</i>
<i>In.</i> <i>siinä</i>	<i>niissä</i>
<i>El.</i> <i>siltä</i>	<i>niistä</i>
<i>Il.</i> <i>siihen</i>	<i>niihin</i>
<i>Ad.</i> <i>sillä</i>	<i>niillä</i>
<i>Abl.</i> <i>siltä</i>	<i>niiltä</i>
<i>All.</i> <i>sille</i>	<i>niille</i>
<i>Abes.</i> <i>sittä</i>	<i>niittä</i>
<i>Transl.</i> <i>siksi</i>	<i>niiksi</i>
<i>Ess.</i> <i>sinä</i>	<i>niinä</i>
<i>Instr.</i> <i>sen</i>	<i>niin</i>

#### *Interrogative Pronouns.*

The interrogative pronouns are *kuka*, *ken*, *who*, *mikä*, *what*, *kumpi*, *which* or *what of two*.

The root of *kuka* is *ku*, the syllable *ka* being added to the former which would otherwise be monosyllabic. The plural is not much used.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> <i>kuka</i>	<i>kutka</i>
<i>Part.</i> <i>kuta</i>	<i>kuita</i>
<i>Gen.</i> <i>kunka</i>	<i>kuiden, kuitten</i>
<i>In.</i> <i>kussa</i>	<i>kuissa</i>
<i>Il.</i> <i>kuhun</i>	<i>kuista</i>
<i>Instr.</i> —	<i>kuin or kuinka</i>
<i>etc.</i>	<i>etc.</i>

In poetry are found *ku* (nominative sing.), *kut* (nominative plur.), *kun* (genitive sing.).

The root of *ken* is *kene*, but in the partitive sing. and nominative plur. this is shortened to *ke*, and the same form is op-

tionally used for the other cases. The root of the plural except in the nominative is *kei*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> ken	ketkä
<i>Part.</i> ketä	keitä
<i>Gen.</i> kenen	keiden, keitten
<i>In.</i> kessä or kenessä	keissä
<i>Il.</i> kenehen or kehen	
etc., etc.	etc., etc.

**Mikä** is declined like **kuka**: the plur. root is **mi**.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> mikä	mitkä
<i>Part.</i> mitä	mitä
<i>Gen.</i> minkä	[miden or mittien]
<i>In.</i> missä	missä
<i>Instr.</i> min	min
etc.	etc.

In poetry are found **mi** (nominative) and **min** (accusative).

**Kumpi** is declined like a comparative.

#### *Relative Pronouns.*

The relative pronouns are *joka*, *who* or *which*, *jompi*, *which of two*.

**Joka** is declined on the same principle as **kuka**, **jompi** like a comparative.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> joka	jotka	jompi	jommat
<i>Part.</i> jota	joita	jompaa	jompia
<i>Gen.</i> jonka	joiden	jomman	jompien
	joitten		jompain
<i>In.</i> jossa	joissa	jommassa	jommissa
etc.		etc.	

*Indefinite Pronouns.*

The indefinite pronouns are *joku*, *some one*; *joppi-kumpi*, *one of two*; both the component parts are declined.

Nominative *joku*, *jompikumpi*, genitive *jonkun*, *jomman-kumman*, inessive *jossakussa*, *jommassa-kummassa*, etc.

*Jokin*, *something*, *kukin*, *each*, *mikin*, *anyone* or *anything*, *kumpi-kin*, *one or other of two*: decline only the first part.

*Kukaan*, *mikään*, *kenkään*, *kumpikaan*, *kumpainenkaan*, meaning *anyone*, *anything*, etc., are used only in negative sentences or in questions which are virtually negative; the suffix *-kaan*, *-kään*, is not declined.

*Joka*, *any* or *every*, is not declined. *Joka mies*, *any man you like*.

*Reflexive Pronoun.*

The reflexive pronoun is *itse*, *self*. It is declined. Genitive *itsen*, partitive *itseä*, etc. It always takes a pronominal suffix to define its meaning: *itseäsi* (partitive) *thyself*, *itseksensä* (translative) *himself*.

Among pronouns may also be reckoned the following:—

**Muu**, *another* (*muuta*, *muun*, etc., plur. *muut*).

**Muutama** or *eräs*, *some one*.

**Molempi**, plur. *molemmat*, *both*.

**Kaikki**, plur. *kaikki*, *all*. **Koko**, indeclinable, *all*.

**Moni**, *many*.

**Sama**, *the same*, or *samainen*.

**Oma**, *one's own*.

## THE VERB.

The verbs in Finnish, as in other languages, are transitive or intransitive, and have an active and passive voice. It is further to be noticed that the negative verb is conjugated quite differently to the affirmative.

The verb may be considered to have seven moods:—the indicative, the concessive, the conditional, the optative, the imperative, the verbal substantive, and the verbal adjective.

Before giving an example of the conjugation of a verb it will be well to examine the formation of these moods and their various tenses. At first only the simple tenses will be considered, that is to say those formed by the addition of suffixes to a verbal root. The compound tenses are formed by combining certain verbal forms with parts of the verb 'to be.'

*Formation of the Moods and Tenses of an Affirmative Verb.*

All parts of the finite verb, except the optative and imperative, mark the person by the following terminations:—

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. -n	1. -mme
2. -t	2. -tte.
3. (-pi, -vi) or none	3. -vat, -vät

In ordinary Finnish the third person singular receives no termination, but the final vowel of the root is lengthened in the present indicative, if not already a long vowel or diphthong. Thus, the roots *anta*, *repi*, *tuo* form the third person sing. present, *antaa*, *repii*, *tuo*. On the same principle the third person sing. of the concessive ends in *-nee*, the tense stem ending in *-ne*. In the imperfect and conditional the tense stem is used unaltered.

Monosyllabic verbs sometimes receive the termination *-pi* in

the third person present, e. g. *saapi*, *tuopi* for *saa*, *tuo*. Another variety of this termination is in *vi*, used very frequently in the Kalevala and the Karelian dialect.

This termination *pi* or *vi* is obviously primitive and is akin to the plur. *-vat* which has the plur. suffix *t*. It is found in all the Baltic dialects in the form of *b*, *p*, or *v*, and sporadically in Cheremissian, but not apparently in the other languages of the Finno-Ugric group.

The *indicative* mood has two simple tenses, the present (also used as a future) and the imperfect.

The *present indicative* has no tense terminations, and is formed by adding the personal terminations to the root; the third sing. having no termination, is of course the simple root, and always ends in a double vowel or diphthong, except in the verb substantive *on*, *he is*. Thus, taking the root *repi* and adding to it the present terminations given above, we get for the present infinitive *revi-n* (by rule 35), *revi-t*, *repii*, *revi-mme*, *revi-tte*, *repi-vät*.

The stem of the *imperfect indicative* is formed by adding to the root the vowel *i*, before which the last vowel of the root is changed or lost according to rules 3-9, 14, 21. To the stem thus formed are added the personal terminations. Thus on adding to the root *saa* the termination *i*, we get *sai*, and this forms *sain*, *sait*, *sai*, *saimme*, *saitte*, *saivat*. Similarly the root *tuo* with the suffix *i* becomes *toi*, and the imperfect *toin*, *toit*, etc.; *antaa* forms *antoi* (*annoin*, 31, *annoit*, etc.).

The *concessive* mood is formed by adding to the root the syllable *-ne*, and then suffixing to this the personal terminations. It has only one tense. Sometimes the suffix *-ne* becomes assimilated to the preceding consonant. Root *saa*, conditional-stem *saane*; 1. *saanen*; 2. *saanet*; 3. *saanee*. 1. *saanemme*; 2. *saa-nette*; 3. *saanevat*. But *nousne* becomes *nousse*; *noussen*, *nouset*, *noussee*, etc., the shortened root of *nouse* being *nous*.

The *conditional* has also only one simple tense formed by

placing the syllable *-isi* after the root and suffixing the personal terminations. The final vowel of the root is lost or altered before the termination *-isi* according to the rules given, but *a* and *ä* remain unchanged except in monosyllabic verbs. Root *saa*, stem of conditional *saisi*; 1. *saisin*; 2. *saisit*; 3. *saisi*. 1. *saisimme*; 2. *saisitte*; 3. *saisivat*.

This suffix *-isi* is perhaps akin to the formative suffix *-kse* (v. page 112).

The *imperative* is characterized by the addition of *ka*, *kä* to the stem, the only persons used being the second sing. and first and second plur. The first person sing. is altogether wanting, and the third person sing. and plur. are supplied by the optative.

The second person sing. is the root, but in a closed form. Thus the roots *lyö*, *tako*, *otta*, *anta*, *pyrki*, *teke* form the imperatives *lyö*, *tao* (28), *ota* (30), *anna* (31), *pyri* (27), *tee* (28). This person had no doubt once the syllable *ka* (*kä*) suffixed, which became reduced to *-k*, and thus closed the syllable. In dialects are found such forms as *annak*, *otak*, clearly showing the origin of the form.

The first and second persons plur. are formed by suffixing *kaamme* (or *kämme*), and *kaatte* (or *kätte*) to the root. In the second person the suffix *tte* is usually omitted, and the form ends simply in *-kaa*. Thus from the roots above cited we have *lyökäämme*, *lyökää*; *takokaamme*, *takokaa*; *ottakaamme*, *ottakaa*, *antakaamme*, *antakaa*; *pyrkikäämme*, *pyrkikää*; *tehköömme* (this root undergoes special changes), *tehköö*.

The *optative*, which in some ways may be regarded as forming one complete tense with the imperative, is characterized by the addition of *ko*, *kö* to the root.

The second person sing. ends in *os* (e. g. *lukeos*, *antaos*), apparently *ko* with the affix of the second person;

lukekos, which has perhaps lost a final vowel, becomes lukeos by rule 28.

The third person sing. ends in koon for kohon, and the third plur. in koot for kohot; antakoon, antakoot; pyrki-köön, pyrkikööt.

When owing to the loss of a vowel this k follows immediately after l, r, or n, it becomes assimilated to those letters, tullos for tulkos; purros for purkos; mennös for menkös.

The *infinitive* in Finnish is a real substantive, that is to say, just as from a verbal root can be derived, by the addition of suffixes, forms expressing person, time, and modality, so by the addition of other suffixes to the same root can be formed nouns, which can take the ordinary case terminations and also the pronominal suffixes.

These infinitives are five in number. Their signification and use, which constitute one of the great difficulties of the Finnish language, will be explained in the Syntax.

I. The termination of the first infinitive is -ta' (-tä), e. g. saada (rule 32); root nous (for nouse), nousta; root tul (tulee), tulla. Between two simple vowels this t drops out and the termination is simply a (ä); sano-ta, sanoa'; repitä, repiä. N.B.—The syllable ta (tä) or a (ä) is closed with the aspiration.

This infinitive has only one case, the translative, which is used with the personal suffixes, e. g. juo, *to drink*, juo-da-kse-ni, *for my drinking*, lukeaksesi, *for thy reading*.

II. The stem of the second infinitive is formed by adding -te' to the root, the syllable being closed. This te becomes e between two simple vowels like the ta of the first infinitive. It has as a rule only two cases, the inessive and instructive (though some verbs have more), to which the personal suffixes can be added, e. g. saa, saade, saadessa, saadessani (*in my receiving*); instructive saaden. Tule, shortened root tul, in-



finitive II *tulle*, inessive *tullessansa*, instructive *tullen*; *repi*, infinitive *repie*, *repiessä*, *repien*.<sup>1</sup>

III. The third infinitive is formed by adding *ma* (*mä*) to the root. There is nothing irregular in its formation or declension. It is used in most of the cases of the sing., but only occasionally takes the personal suffixes, e. g. *sano*, infinitive III *sanoma*, genitive *sanoman*, *sanomalla*, *sanomatta*, etc., exactly like a noun.

IV. The fourth infinitive is formed by adding *mise* to the root. It has two cases, the nominative which ends in *minen*, and the partitive in *mista*. *Sano*, *sanominen*, *sanomista*; *teke*, *tekeminen*, *tekemistä*, *tekemistänsä*, etc.

V. The fifth infinitive, which is not much used except in poetry, and may be regarded as a diminutive derived from infinitive III, is formed by adding *maise* to the root. It is used only in the adessive plural, and always with a personal suffix. *Nouse*, *to rise*, *nouse-mais-i-lla-nsa*; *tule*, *tulemaisillani*.

There are two *participles* or verbal adjectives in Finnish. They are simply adjectives formed from a verbal root by the addition of a suffix.

I. The first verbal adjective is formed by adding *va* (*vä*) to the root. (Sometimes this suffix is found in the form of *pa*, *pä*.) The adjective so formed is declined in the ordinary way.

II. The stem of the second participle is formed by adding *nehe* (shortened *nee*) to the root. This termination (as explained p. 40) becomes *nut* or *nyt* in the nominative, e. g. *oppi*, *to learn*, *oppinehe*, nominative *oppinut*, genitive *oppinehen* (*or neen*),

<sup>1</sup> The closing of the root and omission or weakening of *t* in the first and second forms of the infinitive is no doubt due to the extremely frequent use of the forms with suffixes. Thus *saadakseni* from *saata* is grammatically correct, as is also *lukeakseni* from *luketa*, according to the euphonic rules of the Kalevala or Old Karelian dialect. Such forms as *saada* are probably not nominatives, but shortened translatives.

oppineella, etc., partitive, oppinutta, essive oppineena or oppinunna, illative oppineesen, plur. oppineet, genitive oppinutten, oppineiden, partitive oppineita, etc.

*The Passive.*

All the forms of the finite passive verb in Finnish are *impersonal*, e. g. tuodaan means 'people bring, or 'there is a bringing,' in French 'on apporte;' but there are no personal forms like the Latin or Greek passives.

The root of the passive is formed by adding *ta* or *tä* to the verb. The same changes are made as for the infinitive I active; but,

A. If the *t* of the passive termination comes between two simple vowels it is doubled, e. g. leipo, leivotta (85).

B. Simple *a* and *ä* become *e* before the *t*, which is then doubled, *kaiva*, *kaivetta*; *heittä*, *heitettä*.

The root thus formed receives a termination analogous to the illative, that is to say *h—n* with the same vowel between them as precedes the *h*. In the passive the *h* drops out, and the *n* is preceded by a long vowel. The syllable *ta* in the present is closed with the aspiration.

For instance:—*Saa* makes *saadaan*, that is *saa + ta' + han*, the *h* dropping out and the *t* being softened; *syö*, *syödään* for *syö-tä'-hän*. So too *sido*, *sidotta*, *sidotahan*, which becomes *sido-taan*; *mene* (which is shortened to *men*) becomes *mennään*; *kaiva*, *kaivetta*, *kaivetaan*. It is to be noticed that in verbs ending in a long vowel or diphthong, the passive present has the form *daan*, the *t* being softened. But where the *t* is doubled after a short vowel the present passive ends in *taan*.

The *imperfect* tense is formed as in the active by adding *i* to the stem, but the consonants are not softened, because the syllable *ti* does not end with the aspiration, e. g. the present passive is formed by adding *ta'* (with the aspiration) to the root: *saa-ta'* which becomes *saada*, and then with the termination

**saadaan.** But the imperfect has the stem *saati*, which gives *saatiin*. So we have root *sido*, present *sidotaan*, but imperfect *sidottiin*; *repi*, present *revitään*, imperfect *revittiin*; *tule* (shortened *tul*), present *tullaan*, imperfect *tultiin*.

The *concessive* passive is formed by adding to the passive root in *ta*, the modal termination *ne*, and the usual suffix, *saata + ne + hen = saataneen*. The consonants are not weakened, e. g. *tultaneen*, *siddottaneen*. The final *n* is frequently omitted, e. g. *saatanee*.

The *conditional* is formed by placing *isi* after the syllable *ta*, and suffixing the termination *hin saata + isi + hin*; *saataisiin*; *tul (tule)*, *tulta*, *tultaisiin*.

In the *optative* the termination *ko* is added between *ta* and the suffix *hon*, *saata-ko-hon*, *saatakoon*.

The *imperative* is not used.

Theoretically of course all the five *infinitives* can be formed for the passive as well as the active verb, but practically only two are ever used: (a) The *inessive* sing. of the infinitive II. The root is of the form *saatate*, which becomes *saatae*, and we have such forms as *saataessa*, *noustaessa*. (b) The *instructive* of infinitive III formed by adding *ma* to the root ending in *ta* and suffixing *n*, *saataman*, *luvattaman*.<sup>1</sup>

There are two *participles*.

I. Formed as in the active by adding *va* or *vä* after *ta*, *tä*; *saatava*, *revittävä*.

II. Formed by adding *u* or *y* after *ta* or *tä*, before which vowels *a*, *ä* always fall out; *saata + u*, *saatu*; *revittä + y*, *revitty*.

#### *The Negative Conjugation.*

The conjugation of the negative verb is entirely different from that of the positive.

<sup>1</sup> The first infinitive is occasionally found in the Bible, e. g. Psalm xlv. 12 *Sinä annat meitä syötää niinkuin lampaitsa.*

In Finnish there is no word exactly corresponding to the English words 'not,' 'no.' Instead there is a negative verb, consisting of a root combined with the personal terminations, and which may be literally translated 'not I,' 'not thou,' 'not it,' etc.

The root of this verb in the present is *e* or *ei*, and it is conjugated as below.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en	emme
2. et	ette
3. ei	eivät

The forms for the imperative are formed from the root *äl* or *el*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. —	älkäämme, elkäämme
2. älä, elä	älkäätte, elkäätte, or älkää, elkää

The optative is formed similarly.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
2. allös or ellös	—
3. älköön or elköön	älköt or elköt

There is also a form used in dubitative or conditional sentences.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. ellen	ellemme
2. ellet	ellette
3. ellei	elleivät

This form is used in composition with the present or conditional: *minä tulen, ellei paha ilma estä, I will come if the bad weather does not stop me. Elleivät olisi kotona, in case they are not at home.*

The negative *present* of an active verb is formed by prefixing this verb to the root, *which is always closed by the aspiration.*

Root tuo, to bring.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
en tuo, I do not bring	emme tuo, we do not bring
et tuo, thou dost not bring	ette tuo, ye do not bring
ei tuo, he does not bring	eivät tuo, they do not bring

But the root *repi* makes—

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
en <i>revi</i>	emme <i>revi</i>
et <i>revi</i>	ette <i>revi</i>
ei <i>revi</i>	eivät <i>revi</i>

the root being closed by the aspiration, and consequently becoming *revi* by rule 35.

The negative *imperfect* is formed by prefixing the verb *en*, etc., to the nominative of participle II active. The participle takes the plur. inflexions in the plur.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en tuonut	emme tuoneet
2. et tuonut	ette tuoneet
3. ei tuonut	eivät tuoneet

Or from the root *repi*—

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en repinyt	emme repineet
2. et repinyt	ette repineet
3. ei repinyt	eivät repineet

The negative of the *concessive* is formed in the same way by prefixing the negative verb to the root, to which is added the syllable *-ne*.

**Saa**, to receive; root for the concessive, **saane**, negative concessive.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en saane	emme saane
2. et saane	ette saane
3. ei saane	eivät saane

In an exactly similar manner the conditional is formed by adding *isi* to the root, and prefixing the negative verb.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en saisi	emme saisi
2. et saisi	ette saisi
3. ei saisi	eivät saisi

The negative *imperative* is formed by prefixing to the root of the verb (closed by the aspiration in the singular) the imperative forms of the negative verb given above. In the plur. **ko** (**kö**) is suffixed to the root of the verb to be negated.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. ———	älkäämme saako
2. älä saa	älkäätte saako

Similarly—

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. ———	älkäämme repikö
2. älä revi	älkäätte repikö

The negative *optative* is formed by suffixing **ko**, **kö**, to the root, and employing before it the negative forms of the optative verb. The use of the suffix **ko** in the negative imperative shows how closely the two forms are allied.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
2. ällös saako	—————
3. älköön saako	älkööt saako

The negative of the *passive* is similarly formed by prefixing the verb **ei** to the passive root—that is, to the root of the verb with the syllable **ta** (**tä**) added, but without the termination which characterises the affirmative passive. This root is closed by the aspiration, but the imperfect is formed with participle II, passive, *e. g.* roots **saa**, **repi**, **tule** (**tul**), passive roots **saada**, **revitä**, **tulla**.

<i>Pres.</i> ei saada, ei revitä, ei tulla
<i>Imp.</i> ei saatu, ei revitty, ei tultu
<i>Cono.</i> ei saatane, ei revittäne, ei tultane
<i>Cond.</i> ei saataisi, ei revittäisi, ei tultaisi
<i>Opt.</i> älköön saatako, älköön revittäkö, älköön tultako

*Imperative* not used.

*The Auxiliary Verb.*

The conjugation of the positive auxiliary verb *olla*, to be, is as follows:—

*Present.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. olen	olemme
2. olet	ollette
3. on	ovat

*Imperfect.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. olin	olimme
2. olit	olitte
3. oli	olivat

*Concessive.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. lienen	lienemme
2. lienet	lienette
3. lienee	lienevät

*Conditional.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. olisin	olisimme
2. olisit	olisitte
3. olisi	olisivat

or,

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. ollen	ollemme
2. ollet	ollette
3. ollee	ollevat

*Imperative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. ———	olkaamme
2. ole	olkaa or olkaatte

*Optative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
2. ollos	—————
3. olkoon	olkoot.

*Infinitive.*

I. <i>Part.</i> olla	III. <i>Gen.</i> oleman
<i>Transl.</i> ollakse (ni)	<i>In.</i> olemassa, etc.
II. <i>In.</i> ollessa	IV. <i>Nom.</i> oleminen
<i>Instr.</i> ollen	<i>Part.</i> olemista
	V. <i>Ad.</i> olemaisillani

*Participles.*

*Pres.* oleva                      *Perf.* ollut

*Passive forms.—Indicative.*

*Pres.* ollaan                      *Perf.* on oltu  
*Imp.* oltiin                      *Pluqf.* oli oltu

<i>Concessive.</i>	<i>Conditional.</i>
<i>Simp.</i> oltaneen	<i>Simp.</i> oltaisiin
<i>Comp.</i> lienee oltu	<i>Comp.</i> olisi oltu
<i>Optative.</i>	<i>Infinitive.</i>
oltakoon	II. <i>In.</i> oltaessa
	III. <i>Gen.</i> oltaman

*Participles.**Pres.* oltava*Perf.* oltu.

In poetry are found various contracted forms, mostly produced by the omission of *l* from the root. Present indicative 1. *oon*, 2. *oot*; plur. 1. *oomme*, 2. *ootte*. Conditional: *oisin*, *oisit*, *oisi*, *oisimme*, *oisitte*, *oisivat*. Concessive: *lien*, *liet*, *lie*. Passive form: *liedään*.

With the aid of this auxiliary and certain participles are formed the compound tenses of the Finnish verb. These are:—

(1) The perfect, formed with the present of the auxiliary and the nominative of participle II, which in the plur. takes the plural terminations, as is the case in all the other tenses: *olen*, *olet*, *on saanut*; *olemme*, *olette*, *ovat saaneet*, *I, thou, he has received*.

(2) The pluperfect, formed by prefixing the imperfect of the auxiliary to the same participle: *olin*, *olit*, *oli saanut*; *olimme*, *olitte*, *olivat saaneet*, *I had received*, etc.

(3) The compound concessive, formed by adding the conditional of the auxiliary to the same participle: *lienen*, *lienet*, *lienee saanut*; *lienemme*, *lienette*, *lienevät saaneet*, *I may have received* (*il se peut que j'ai reçu*).

(4) The compound conditional, formed by prefixing the conditional of the auxiliary to the same participle: *olisin*, *olisit*, *olisi saanut*; *olisimme*, *olisitte*, *olisivat saaneet*, *I should have received*, etc.

When these four tenses of the verb 'to be' are combined



with participle I, they form a future, of which there may be four varieties:—

(1) *Olen, etc., saava, I shall receive*; (2) *olin, etc., saava, I was about to receive*; (3) *lienen saava, perhaps I shall receive*; (4) *olisin saava, I might have received*.

Though the plur. of these forms should grammatically be *olemme saavat*, which forms are employed in the literary language, yet in the spoken language the participle does not take the plural termination.

The compound tenses of the passive are formed by adding the tense of the verb *olla* to participle II, passive.

<i>Perf. on saatu</i>	<i>Plupf. oli saatu</i>
<i>Comp. Conc. lienee saatu</i>	<i>Comp. Cond. olisi saatu</i>

The negative forms for these tenses are formed by putting the auxiliary verb in the negative form, and keeping the participle as before. The negative forms of the auxiliary verb are:—

*Present.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en ole	emme ole
2. et ole	ette ole
3. ei ole	eivät ole

*Imperfect.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en ollut	emme olleet
2. et ollut	ette olleet
3. ei ollut	eivät olleet

*Concessive.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en liene	emme liene
2. et liene	ette liene
3. ei liene	eivät liene

*Conditional.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en olisi	emme olisi
2. et olisi	ette olisi
3. ei olisi	eivät olisi

It is hoped that with the aid of the foregoing explanations the conjugation of a Finnish verb will be perfectly clear.

The verbs may be divided into three conjugations.

*First Conjugation.*

The characteristics of this conjugation are as follow :—

- (a) The root always ends in a long vowel.
- (b) There is no change of consonants.
- (c) The third person sing. of the present tense is the simple root.
- (d) The last vowel of the root is liable to changes before the *i* of the past tense and conditional.
- (e) In the present passive, and in infinitive I the termination *ta* becomes *da*.

This conjugation includes :—

- 1. All monosyllabic roots. In participle I active they take either *va* (*vä*) or *pa* (*pä*).
- 2. Trisyllabic roots ending in *oi* or *öi*. These have only *va* (*vä*) in the participle I.

Monosyllabic verbs occasionally take the termination *pi* in the third person sing. present indicative, e.g. *lyöpi*, *saapi*. This is especially frequent in the dialect spoken about St. Petersburg.

The trisyllabic verbs ending in *oi*, *öi*, also frequently form their infinitive in *ta*, that is to say, the root also exists in a form ending in *-tse*. *Haravoida* is the infinitive from the root *haravoi*; *haravoita*, the infinitive from the derived root of the same meaning *haravoltse*.

Examples: *saa, to receive; tuo, to bring.*

*Active Voice. Indicative Mood.*

*Present. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. <i>saan</i>	<i>saame</i>
2. <i>saat</i>	<i>saatte</i>
3. <i>saa</i>	<i>saavat</i>

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. <i>en saa</i>	<i>emme saa</i>
2. <i>et saa</i>	<i>ette saa</i>
3. <i>ei saa</i>	<i>eivät saa</i>

*Imperfect. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. <i>sain (3)</i>	<i>saimme</i>
2. <i>sait</i>	<i>saitte</i>
3. <i>sai</i>	<i>saivat</i>

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. <i>en saanut</i>	<i>emme saaneet</i>
2. <i>et saanut</i>	<i>ette saaneet</i>
3. <i>ei saanut</i>	<i>eivät saaneet</i>

*Perfect. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. <i>olen saanut</i>	<i>olemme saaneet</i>
2. <i>olet saanut</i>	<i>ollette saaneet</i>
3. <i>on saanut</i>	<i>ovat saaneet</i>

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. <i>en ole saanut</i>	<i>emme ole saaneet</i>
2. <i>et ole saanut</i>	<i>ette ole saaneet</i>
3. <i>ei ole saanut</i>	<i>eivät ole saaneet</i>

*Pluperfect. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. <i>olin saanut</i>	<i>olimme saaneet</i>
2. <i>olit saanut</i>	<i>olitte saaneet</i>
3. <i>oli saanut</i>	<i>olivat saaneet</i>

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en ollut saanut	emme olleet saaneet
2. et ollut saanut	ette olleet saaneet
3. ei ollut saanut	eivät olleet saaneet

*Simple Concessive. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. saanen	saanemme
2. saanet	saanette,
3. saanee	saanevat

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en saane	emme saane
2. et saane	ette saane
3. ei saane	eivät saane

*Compound Concessive. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. lienen saanut	lienemme saaneet
2. lienet saanut	lienette saanet
3. lienee saanut	lienevät saaneet

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en liene saanut	emme liene saaneet
2. et liene saanut	ette liene saaneet
3. ei liene saanut	eivät liene saaneet

*Simple Conditional. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. saisin	saisimme
2. saisit	saisitte
3. saisi	saisivat

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en saisi	emme saisi
2. et saisi	ette saisi
3. ei saisi	eivät saisi

*Compound Conditional. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. olisin saanut	olisimme saaneet
2. olisit saanut	olisitte saaneet
3. olisi saanut	olisivat saaneet

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en olisi saanut	emme olisi saaneet
2. et olisi saanut	ette olisi saaneet
3. ei olisi saanut	eivät olisi saaneet

*First Future. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. olen saava (saapa)	olemme saava or saavat (pa)
2. olet saava (pa)	olette saava or saavat (pa)
3. on saava (pa)	ovat saava (pa)

Such forms as *ovat saavat* are avoided on account of the repetition of *vat*.

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en ole saava, or saapa	emme ole saava, or saavat
2. et ole saava	ette ole saava
3. ei ole saava	eivät ole saava

The other futures *olin saava*, *lienen saava*, and *olisi saava* are conjugated exactly similarly.

*Imperative. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. —	saakaamme
2. saa	saakaa(tte)

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. —	älkäämme saako
2. älä saa	älkää saako

*Optative. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
2. saa'os	—
3. saakoon	saakoot

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>		<i>Plur.</i>
2. ällös saako		—
3. älköön saako		älkööt saako

*Infinitive.*

- I. saada  
*Transl.* saadakse (ni)  
 II. *Iness.* saadessa  
*Instr.* saaden  
 III. saama, used in nearly all the cases  
 IV. *Nom.* saaminen  
*Part.* saamista  
 V. *Adess. Plur.* saamaisilla (ni), (always with suffix).

*Participles.*

- I. saapa or saava  
 II. saanut

*Passive Voice.*

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aff.</i> saadaan <i>Neg.</i> ei saada
<i>Imperfect</i>	<i>Aff.</i> saatiin <i>Neg.</i> ei saatu
<i>Perfect</i>	<i>Aff.</i> on saatu <i>Neg.</i> ei ole saatu
<i>Pluperfect</i>	<i>Aff.</i> oli saatu <i>Neg.</i> ei oltu saatu, or, ei ollut saatu
<i>Concessive</i>	<i>Aff.</i> saataneen <i>Neg.</i> ei saatane
<i>Concess. Comp.</i>	<i>Aff.</i> lienee saatu <i>Neg.</i> ei liene saatu
<i>Conditional</i>	<i>Aff.</i> saataisiin <i>Neg.</i> ei saataisi
<i>Cond. Comp.</i>	<i>Aff.</i> olisi saatu <i>Neg.</i> ei olisi saatu
<i>Optative</i>	<i>Aff.</i> saatakoon <i>Neg.</i> älköön saatako

*Infinitive.* The only forms used are—

- II. *Iness.* saataessa  
 III. *Instr.* saataman

*Active Voice. Indicative Mood.**Present. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. tuon	tuomme
2. tuot	tuotte
3. tuo	tuovat

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en tuo	emme tuo
2. et tuo	ette tuo
3. ei tuo	eivät tuo

*Imperfect. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. toin (4)	toimme
2. toit	toitte
3. toi	toivat

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en tuonut	emme tuoneet
2. et tuonut	ette tuoneet
3. ei tuonut	eivät tuoneet

*Perfect. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. olen tuonut	olemme tuoneet
2. olet tuonut	olette tuoneet
3. on tuonut	ovat tuoneet

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en ole tuonut	emme ole tuoneet
2. et ole tuonut	ette ole tuoneet
3. ei ole tuonut	eivät ole tuoneet

*Pluperfect. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. olin tuonut	olimme tuoneet
2. olit tuonut	olitte tuoneet
3. oli tuonut	olivat tuoneet

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en ollut tuonut	emme olleet tuoneet
2. et ollut tuonut	ette olleet tuoneet
3. ei ollut tuonut	eivät olleet tuoneet

*Simple Concessive. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. tuonen	tuonemme
2. tuonet	tuonette
3. tuonee	tuonevat

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en tuone	emme tuone
2. et tuone	ette tuone
3. ei tuone	eivät tuone

*Compound Concessive. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. lienen tuonut	lienemme tuoneet
2. lienet tuonut	lienette tuoneet
3. lienee tuonut	lienevät tuoneet

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en liene tuonut	emme liene tuoneet
2. et liene tuonut	ette liene tuoneet
3. ei liene tuonut	eivät liene tuoneet

*Simple Conditional. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. toisin (4)	1. toisimme
2. toisit	2. toisitte
3. toisi	3. toisivat

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en toisi	1. emme toisi
2. et toisi	2. ette toisi
3. ei toisi	3. eivät toisi



*Compound Conditional. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. olisin tuonut	olisimme tuoneet
2. olisit tuonut	olisitte tuoneet
3. olisi tuonut	olisivat tuoneet

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en olisi tuonut	emme olisi tuoneet
2. et olisi tuonut	ette olisi tuoneet
3. ei olisi tuonut	eivät olisi tuoneet

*First Future. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. olen tuova (tuopa)	olemme tuova or tuovat (pa)
2. olet tuova (pa)	olette tuova or tuovat (pa)
3. on tuova (pa)	ovat tuova (pa)

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en ole tuova or tuopa	emme ole tuova or tuovat
2. et ole tuova	ette ole tuova
3. ei ole tuova	eivät ole tuova

*Imperative. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. —	tuokaamme
2. tuo	tuokaa(tte)

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. —	älkäämme tuoko
2. älä tuo	älkää tuoko

*Optative. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
2. tuo'os	—
3. tuokoon	tuokoot

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
2. ällös tuoko	—
3. alköön tuoko	älkööt tuoko

*Infinitive.*

- I. tuoda'  
*Transl.* tuodakse (ni)  
 II. *Iness.* tuodessa  
*Instr.* tuoden  
 III. tuoma *used in nearly all the cases*  
 IV. *Nom.* tuominen  
*Part.* tuomista  
 V. *Adess. Plur.* tuomaisilla (ni) (*always with suffix*)

*Participles.*

- I. tuopa or tuova  
 II. tuonut

*Passive Voice.*

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aff.</i> tuodaan <i>Neg.</i> ei tuoda
<i>Imperfect</i>	<i>Aff.</i> tuotiin <i>Neg.</i> ei tuotu
<i>Perfect</i>	<i>Aff.</i> on tuotu <i>Neg.</i> ei ole tuotu
<i>Pluperfect</i>	<i>Aff.</i> oli tuotu <i>Neg.</i> ei oltu tuotu, or ei ollut tuotu
<i>Concessive</i>	<i>Aff.</i> tuotaneen <i>Neg.</i> ei tuotane
<i>Concess. Comp.</i>	<i>Aff.</i> lienee tuotu <i>Neg.</i> ei liene tuotu
<i>Conditional</i>	<i>Aff.</i> tuotaisiin <i>Neg.</i> ei tuotaisi
<i>Cond. Comp.</i>	<i>Aff.</i> olisi tuotu <i>Neg.</i> ei olisi tuotu
<i>Optative</i>	<i>Aff.</i> tuotakoon <i>Neg.</i> älköön tuotako

*Infinitive.* The only forms used are—

- II. *Iness.* tuotaessa  
 III. *Instr.* tuotaman

*Participles.*

- I. saatava, tuotava  
 II. saatu, tuotu

Similarly *lyö*, *to strike*, makes in the present *lyön*, *lyöt*, *lyö*, *lyömme*, *lyötte*, *lyövät*; imperfect *löin* (by rule 4); concessive *lyönen*; conditional *löisin* (4); imperative *lyö*, *lyökäämme*, *lyökää*; infinitives *lyödä*, *lyödessä*, *lyömän*, *lyöminen*, *lyömäisilläni*; participles *lyövä* and *lyönyt*; passive *lyödään*, etc.

So also *satuloi*, *saddle*, forms present indicative *satuloin*, *satuloit*, *satuloi*, *satuloimme*, *satuloitte*, *satuloivat*; imperfect *satuloin* (5); concessive *satuloinen*; conditional *satuloisin*; imperative *satuloi*; optative *satuloi'os*; infinitives *satuloida*, *satuloidessa*, *satuloiman*, *satuloiminen*, *satuloimaisillani*; participles *satuloiva*, *satuloinut*; passive *satuloidaan*.

### *Second Conjugation.*

The second conjugation has the following characteristics:—

- (1) The root ends in a short vowel.
- (2) The consonant at the beginning of the last syllable is liable to the usual changes, when that syllable becomes closed.
- (3) In the third person sing. present indicative the final vowel is lengthened.
- (4) The first infinitive has the termination *a* (*ä*).
- (5) The root of the passive ends in *tta* (*ttä*), and hence the present passive in *taan*.
- (6) The first participle active *always* ends in *va* (*vä*).

To this conjugation belong:—

- A. All roots ending in *o*, *ö*, *u*, *y*.
- B. All dissyllables ending in *a*, *ä*, and polysyllables ending in *ta* (*tä*) after *h*, *l*, *n*, *r*, *s*, *t*; *heittä*, *to throw*; *tappa*, *to kill*; *armahta*, *to pity*; *sivalta*, *to strike*; *ymmärtä*, *to understand*.

- (1) In these verbs *a* or *ä* is always changed to *e* before the termination of the passive, *kaata*, *kaadetaan*.

(2) Before the *i* of the imperfect, polysyllables always reject *a* or *ä*, *pelasta*, *pelasti*, etc.

Dissyllabic verbs vary in their treatment of *a*, though *ä* is always rejected. If the vowel of the first syllable is *o* or *u*; then *a* is generally rejected. *Otta*, *take*, imperfect *otti*; *muista*, *muisti*. But if the vowel of the first syllable is *a* or *e*, the *a* of the last syllable generally becomes *o*; *laula*, *lauloi*, *sing*; *anta*, *antoi*, *give*. But a great number of verbs ending in *ta*, and having *a* in the first syllable, use both forms; *ahtoi* or *ahti*, *blow*; *karttoi* or *kartti*, *to avoid*; *saattoi* or *saatti*, *to lead*.

If a verb ending in *lta*, *nta*, or *rta* (or the corresponding forms in *ä*) elides the vowel before *i*, then *t* becomes *s*; *kieltä*, *to deny*, *kielsi*; *kumarta*, *to adore*, *kumarsi*, etc. The same change occurs after a long vowel in the forms *löysi*, *found*; *tiesi*, *knew*; *taisi*, *knew how to*; *pyysi*, *asked*; *kaasi*, *threw down*; *huusi*, *shouted*. Most verbs of this type, however, take *ti*, though some have double forms.

C. All verbs ending in *i*.

D. All dissyllables ending in *ke*, *te*, *pe*; e. g. *luke*, *to read*; *lähte*, *go away*; *kylpe*, *to bath*.

This *e* is elided before *i*, and *t* is sometimes changed to *s*; *tunte*, *to feel*, *tunsi*.

In infinitive II either the *e* of the root or that of the termination is changed to *i*, generally that of the root; *lukiessa* or *lukeissa*, but never *lukeessa*.

Examples of conjugation II:—Roots *repi*, *to tear*; *luke*, *to read*. The *p* of *repi* becomes *v* in a closed syllable, and the *k* of *luke* drops out (by rules 34 and 27).

*Present. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. <i>revin</i>	<i>revimme</i>
2. <i>revit</i>	<i>revitte</i>
3. <i>repii</i>	<i>repivät</i>

*Negative.* (The root closed by the aspiration.)

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en revī	emme revī
2. et revī	ette revī
3. ei revī	eivät revī

*Imperfect. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. revin	revimme
2. revit	revitte
3. repi	repivät

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en repinyt	emme repineet
2. et repinyt	ette repineet
3. ei repinyt	eivät repineet

*Perfect. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. olen repinyt	olemme repineet
2. olet repinyt	olette repineet
3. on repinyt	ovat repineet

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en ole repinyt	emme ole repineet
2. et ole repinyt	ette ole repineet
3. ei ole repinyt	eivät ole repineet

*Pluperfect. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. olin repinyt	olimme repineet
2. olit repinyt	olitte repineet
3. oli repinyt	olivat repineet

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en ollut repinyt	emme olleet repineet
2. et ollut repinyt	ette olleet repineet
3. ei ollut repinyt	eivät olleet repineet

*Concessive. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. repinen	repinemme
2. repinet	repinette
3. repinee	repinevät

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en repine	emme repine
2. et repine	ette repine
3. ei repine	eivät repine

*Compound Conditional. Affirmative.*

1. lienen repinyt	lienemme repineet
-------------------	-------------------

(The formation of the remaining persons will now be clear.)

*Compound Conditional. Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en liene repinyt	emme liene repineet

*Conditional. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. repisin	repisimme
2. repisit	repisitte
3. repisi	repisivät

*Negative.*

1. en repisi	emme repisi
--------------	-------------

*Compound Conditional. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. olisin repinyt	olisimme repineet

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
en olisi repinyt	emme olisi repineet

*Imperative. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. —	repikäämme
2. revi	repikää

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. —	älkäämme repikö
2. älä revi	älkää repikö

*Optative. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
2. repi'ös	—
3. repiköön	repikööt

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
2. ällös repikö	—
3. älköön repikö	älkööt repikö

*Participles.*

- I. repivä  
II. repinyt

*Infinitives.*

- I. repiä  
*Transl.* repiäksi  
II. *Ines.* repiessä  
*Instr.* repien  
III. repimä, etc.  
IV. *Nom.* repiminen  
*Part.* repimistä  
V. *Adess.* repimäisillä(ni)

*Passive.*

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aff.</i> revitään <i>Neg.</i> ei revitä
<i>Imperfect</i>	<i>Aff.</i> revittiin <i>Neg.</i> ei revitty
<i>Perfect</i>	<i>Aff.</i> on revitty <i>Neg.</i> ei ole revitty
<i>Pluperfect</i>	<i>Aff.</i> oli revitty <i>Neg.</i> ei ollut revitty, or ei oltu revitty, etc.
<i>Concessive</i>	<i>Aff.</i> revittäneen <i>Neg.</i> ei revittäne
<i>Comp. Concess. Aff.</i>	lienee revitty
<i>Neg.</i>	ei liene revitty

<i>Conditional</i>	<i>Aff.</i> revittäisiin
	<i>Neg.</i> ei revittäisi
<i>Comp. Cond.</i>	<i>Aff.</i> olisi revitty
	<i>Neg.</i> ei olisi revitty
<i>Optative</i>	<i>Aff.</i> revittäköön
	<i>Neg.</i> älköön revittäkö
<i>Infjn. II. Iness.</i>	revittäessä

*Participles.*

I. revittävä

II. revitty

*Present. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. luen (28)	luemme
2. luet	luette
3. lukee	lukevat

*Negative.* (The root closed by the aspiration.)

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en lue	emme lue
2. et lue	ette lue
3. ei lue	eivät lue

*Imperfect. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. luin	luimme
2. luit	luitte
3. luki	lukivat

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en lukenut	emme lukeneet
2. et lukenut	ette lukeneet
3. ei lukenut	eivät lukeneet

*Perfect. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. olen lukenut	olemme lukeneet
2. olet lukenut	ollette lukeneet
3. on lukenut	ovat lukeneet



*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en ole lukenut	emme ole lukeneet
2. et ole lukenut	ette ole lukeneet
3. ei ole lukenut	eivät ole lukeneet

*Pluperfect.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. olin lukenut	olimme lukeneet
2. olit lukenut	olitte lukeneet
3. oli lukenut	olivat lukeneet

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en ollut lukenut	emme olleet lukeneet
2. et ollut lukenut	ette olleet lukeneet
3. ei ollut lukenut	eivät olleet lukeneet

*Concessive. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. lukenen	lukenemme
2. lukenet	lukenette
3. lukenee	lukenevat

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en lukene	emme lukene
2. et lukene	ette lukene
3. ei lukene	eivät lukene

*Compound Concessive. Affirmative.*

1. lienen lukenut	lienemme lukeneet
-------------------	-------------------

(The formation of the remaining persons will now be clear.)

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en liene lukenut	emme liene lukeneet

*Conditional. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. lukisin (14)	lukisimme
2. lukisit	lukisitte
3. lukisi	lukisivat

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en lukisi, etc.	emme lukisi, etc.

*Compound Conditional. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. olisin lukenut, etc.	olisimme lukeneet, etc.

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
en olisi lukenut, etc.	emme olisi lukeneet, etc.

*Imperative. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. —	lukekaamme
2. lue	lukekaa

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. —	älkäämme lukeko
2. älä lue	älkää lukeko

*Optative. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
2. luke'os	—
3. lukekoon	lukekoot

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
2. ällös lukeko	—
3. älköön lukeko	älköt lukeko

*Participles.*

- I. lukeva
- II. lukenut

*Infinitives.*

- I. lukea
- Transl.* lukeaksi
- II. *Ines.* lukiessa
- Instr.* lukien
- III. lukema, etc.
- IV. *Nom.* lukeminen
- Part.* lukemista, etc.
- V. *Adess.* lukemaisilla(ni)

*Passive.*

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aff.</i> luetaan <i>Neg.</i> ei lueta
<i>Imperfect</i>	<i>Aff.</i> luettiin <i>Neg.</i> ei luettu
<i>Perfect</i>	<i>Aff.</i> on luettu <i>Neg.</i> ei ole luettu
<i>Pluperfect</i>	<i>Aff.</i> oli luettu <i>Neg.</i> ei ollut luettu
<i>Concessive</i>	<i>Aff.</i> luettaneen <i>Neg.</i> ei luettane
<i>Comp. Cond.</i>	<i>Aff.</i> lienee luettu <i>Neg.</i> ei liene luettu
<i>Conditional</i>	<i>Aff.</i> luettaisiin <i>Neg.</i> ei luettaisi
<i>Comp. Cond.</i>	<i>Aff.</i> olisi luettu <i>Neg.</i> ei olisi luettu
<i>Optative</i>	<i>Aff.</i> luettakoon <i>Neg.</i> älköön luettako
<i>Infm. II.</i>	<i>Iness.</i> luettaessa

*Participles.*

- I. luettava
- II. luettu

Similarly *tako*, *to forge*, makes the present *taon*, *taot*, *takoo*, *taomme*, *taotte*, *takovat* (*k* being lost by 28); imperfect *taoin*, *taoit*, *takoi*, *taoimme*, *taoitte*, *takoivat*; concessive *takonen*; conditional *takoisin*; imperative *tao*, *takokaa*; optative *tako'os*, *takokoon*; infinitives *takoa*, *takoessa*, *takoman*, *takominen*, *takomaisillani*; participles *takova*, *takonut*; passive *taotaan*, etc.

*Otta*, *to take*; present *otan* (30), *otat*, *ottaa*, *otamme*, *otatte*, *ottavat*; imperfect *otin*, *otit*, *otiti*, etc.; concessive *ottanen*; conditional *ottaisin*; imperative *ota*, *ottakaamme*; optative *ottaos*, *ottakoon*; infinitive *ottaa*, *ottaessa*, *ottaman*, *ottaminen*, *ottamaisillani*; participles *ottava*, *ottanut*; passive *otetaan*, etc.

**Rakenta**, *to build*, has in the present **rakennan** (31), **rakennat**, **rakentaa**, **rakennamme**, **rakennatte**, **rakentavat**; imperfect **rakensin**, **rakensit**, **rakensit**, etc.; passive **rakennetaan**, etc.

**Ymmärtä**, *to understand*, has similarly present (31) **ymmärrän**, **ymmärrät**, **ymmärtää**, etc.; imperfect **ymmärsin**; passive **ymmärretään**.

**Pyrki**, *to strive*, makes in the present **pyrin**, **pyrit**, **pyrkii**, **pyrimme**, **pyritte**, **pyrkivät**; imperfect **pyrin**; concessive **pyrkinen**; conditional **pyrkisin**; imperative **pyri**, **pyrkikää**; infinitive **pyrkiä**, etc.; passive **pyritään**, etc.

**Tappa**, *to kill*; present **tapan**, **tapat**, **tappaa**, etc.; imperfect **tapoin**, **tapoit**, **tappoi**, (7); concessive **tappanen**; conditional **tappaisin**; imperative **tapa**, **tappakaamme**; infinitive **tappaa**, **tappaessa**, **tappaman**, **tappaminen**, **tappamaisillani**; passive **tapetaan** (11).

### *Third Conjugation.*

This conjugation comprises all verbs where the radical is liable to become closed by the loss of the final vowel, from which results a variety of consonantal changes. The verbs which are conjugated in this way fall into two classes.

I. Dissyllabic roots ending in **le**, **ne**, **re**, **se**, and all polysyllabic roots ending in the vowel **e**.

These verbs have the following characteristics.

A. The root is closed—

- (1) Before **t** in infinitive I and II and in the passive verb;
- (2) Before **n** in the conditional and participle II active;
- (3) Before **k** in the imperative.

B. The root may then be further changed by assimilation—

- (1) Before **t** in the infinitive. The roots **tule**, **mene**, **pure** make their infinitives **tulta**, **mentä**, **purta**, which become **tulla**,

**mennä, purra.** But roots ending in **se**, like **nouse**, keep the infinitive in **sta**,—**nousta** ; for **st** is not a group liable to assimilation. Further simplifications of consonantal groups may take place ; for example, root **syökse**, *to throw down*, shortened to **syöks**, infinitive **syökstä**, becomes **syösta** ; root **säkenöitse**, infinitive **säkenöits-tä** becomes **säkenöitä**.

(2) The **l**, **r**, or **t** at the end of the closed root always assimilates the **n** of the conditional and of participle II active. The final **s** sometimes assimilates **n** ; frequently in participle II, rarely in the conditional.

*E. g.* The roots **tule**, **pure**, **kaitse**, which in their closed forms become **tul**, **pur**, **kait**, form the conditionals **tullee**, **purree**, **kainnee**, and the participles **tullut**, **purrut**, **kainnut**. **Nouse** forms **nousnee**, rarely **noussee** and participle II **nousnut** or **noussut**.

C. A strong consonant at the beginning of the penultimate syllable in polysyllabic words is also liable to softening in forms derived from the closed root, but *not* in forms derived from the full root. Root **rohkene**, *to dare* ; infinitive I **rohjeta**.

D. The final **e** is dropped in the imperfect.

E. The third sing. present has **ee**.

F. Trisyllabic roots in **ne** change **n** to **t** in the imperative, and have the infinitive I ending in **ta** preceded by a vowel so that **ne** is altogether lost ; e. g. **alene** ; imperative **aletkoon** ; infinitive **aleta**.

G. The participle I active ends in **va**, **vä**.

In the verbs **näke** and **teke** **k** becomes **h** when the root loses its final vowel.

II. The second division of this conjugation comprises all trisyllabic roots ending in **ta**, **tä** preceded by a short vowel. Such are **lupata**, *to promise* ; **hakkata**, *to strike* ; **pelkätä**, *to fear*, etc.

In these verbs the following changes occur:—

A. In the present the *t* of the syllable *ta* (*tä*) is lost, and if the preceding vowel is *a* or *ä*, a long vowel is formed. That is, *lupata*, *pelkätä* become *lupaa*, *pelkää*. If the preceding vowel is *o*, *ö*, or *e*, the vowels may be assimilated into one long vowel or remain as they are. *Putota*, *putoa*, or *putoo*; *kerketä*, *kerkeä*, or *kerkee*; but if the vowel of the penultimate syllable is *u*, *y*, or *i*, such assimilation rarely occurs.

B. In the imperfect the final vowel is lost and *t* becomes *s* before the *i* which characterizes this tense; *lupasin*, etc.

C. The root is closed in the concessive, and the final *t* assimilated to the *n*; *lupata-nen* becomes *luvat-nen* (34), and then *luvannen* (30).

D. In the conditional the last syllable of the root is generally completely lost; *lupaisi* for *lupata-isi*; but a trace of it remains in such forms as *kokoaisi* (alternative for *kokoisi*) representing *kokotaisi*.

V. Similarly infinitives I, II, and the passive are formed from the closed root, and as the *formative* syllable *ta* is closed by the breathing, *tt* becomes *t*; that is to say, the full root *lupata* becomes the closed root *luvat*; to this is added the closed syllable *ta'*, and *luvatta'* becomes *luvata*. Similarly the passive *luvataan*.

### Examples.

Division I. Roots *tule*, *to come*; closed form *tul*. *Nouse*, *to rise*; closed form *nous*.

<i>Present. Affirmative.</i>	
<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. <i>tulen</i>	<i>tulemme</i>
2. <i>tulet</i>	<i>tulette</i>
3. <i>tulee</i>	<i>tulevat</i>

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en tule	emme tule
2. et tule	ette tule
3. ei tule	eivät tule

*Imperfect. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. tulin	tulimme
2. tulit	tulitte
3. tuli	tulivat

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en tullut	emme tulleet
2. et tullut	ette tulleet
3. ei tullut	eivät tulleet

*Perfect. Affirmative.*

1. olen tullut, etc.

*Negative.*

1. en ole tullut, etc.

*Pluperfect. Affirmative.*

1. olin tullut, etc.

*Negative.*

1. en ollut tullut, etc.

*Concessive. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. tullen	tullemme,
2. tullet	tullette
3. tullee	tullevat

*Negative.*

1. en tulle, etc.

*Comp. Concess. Affirmative.*

1. lienen tullut

*Negative.*

1. en liene tullut

*Conditional. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. tulisin	tulisimme
2. tulisit	tulisitte
3. tulisi	tulisivat

*Negative.*

1. en tulisi, etc.

*Compound Conditional. Affirmative.*

1. olisin tullut, etc.

*Negative.*

1. en olisi tullut, etc.

*Imperative. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. —	tulkaame
2. tule	tulkaa

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. —	älkäämme
2. älä tule	älkää tulko

*Optative. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
2. tullos	—
3. tulkoon	tulkoot

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
2. ällös tulko	—
3. älköön tulko	älköt tulko

*Infinitives.*

I. tulla

*Transl.* tullakse(ni)

II. tulle

*Ines.* tullessa

*Instr.* tullen

III. tuleman

IV. *Nom.* tuleminen

*Part.* tulemista

V. tulemaisilla(ni)



*Participles.*

- I. tuleva  
II. tullut

*Passive.*

- Pres. Aff.* tullaan,  
*Neg.* ei tulla  
*Impf. Aff.* tultiin  
*Neg.* ei tultu  
*Conc. Aff.* tultaneen  
*Neg.* ei tultane  
*Comp. Conc. Aff.* lienee tultu  
*Neg.* ei liene tultu  
*Cond. Aff.* tultaisiin  
*Neg.* ei tultaisi  
*Cond. Comp. Aff.* olisi tultu  
*Neg.* ei olisi tultu  
*Opt. Aff.* tultakoon  
*Neg.* älköön tultako

*Participles.*

- I. tultava  
II. tultu

*Present. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. nousen	nousemme
2. nouset	nousette
3. nousee	nousevat

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en nous	emme nous
2. et nous	ette nous
3. ei nous	eivät nous

*Imperfect. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. nousin	nousimme
2. nousit	nousitte
3. nousi	nousivat

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. en nousnut or noussut <sup>1</sup>	emme nousneet
2. et nousnut	ette nousneet
3. ei nousnut	eivät nousneet

*Perfect. Affirmative.*

1. olen nousnut, or noussut, etc.

*Negative.*

1. en ole nousnut or noussut, etc.

*Pluperfect. Affirmative.*

1. olin nousnut or noussut, etc.

*Negative.*

1. en ollut nousnut or noussut, etc.

*Concessive. Affirmative.*

1. nousnen or noussen	nousnemme or noussemme
2. nousnet or nousset	nousnette or noussette
3. nousnee or noussee	nousnevat or noussevat

*Negative.*

1. en nousne or nousse, etc.

*Compound Concessive. Affirmative.*

1. lienen nousnut or noussut, etc.

*Negative.*

1. en liene nousnut or noussut, etc.

*Conditional. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. nousisin	nousisimme
2. nousisit	nousisitte
3. nousisi	nousisivat

*Negative.*

1. en nousisi, etc.

<sup>1</sup> The participle is nousnut or noussut.

*Compound Conditional. Affirmative.*

1. olisin nousnut or noussut, etc.

*Negative.*

1. en olisi nousnut or noussut, etc.

*Imperative. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. —	nouskaamme
2. nouse	nouskaa

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. —	älkäämme nousko
2. älä nouse	älkää nousko

*Optative. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
2. nousecs	
3. nouskoo	nouskoot

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
2. ällös nousko	—
3. alköön nousko	älkööt nousko

*Infinitives.*

I. nousta

*Transl.* noustakse(ni)

II. nouste

*Ines.* noustessa*Instr.* nousten

III. nouseman, etc.

IV. *Nom.* nouseminen*Part.* nousemista

V. nousemaisilla(ni)

*Participles.*

I. nouseva

II. nousnut, or noussut

*Passive.*

<i>Pres. Aff.</i>	noustaan
<i>Neg.</i>	ei nousta
<i>Impf. Aff.</i>	noustiin
<i>Neg.</i>	ei noustu
<i>Conc. Aff.</i>	noustaneen
<i>Neg.</i>	ei noustane
<i>Comp. Conc. Aff.</i>	lienee noustu
<i>Neg.</i>	ei liene noustu
<i>Cond. Aff.</i>	noustaisiin
<i>Neg.</i>	ei noustaisi
<i>Cond. Comp. Aff.</i>	olisi noustu
<i>Neg.</i>	ei olisi noustu
<i>Imp. Aff.</i>	noustakoon
<i>Neg.</i>	älkööñ noustako

*Participle.*

I. noustava

II. noustu

Roots *lupata*, to promise ; *kokota*, to collect.*Present Indicative. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. lupaan	lupaamme
2. lupaat	lupaatte
3. lupaa	lupaavat

*Negative.*

<i>Sing.</i>
1. en lupaa
2. et lupaa, etc.

*Imperfect. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. lupasin	lupasimme
2. lupasit	lupasitte
3. lupasi	lupasivat

*Negative.*

1. en luvannut, etc.

*Concessive. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. luvannen	luvannemme
2. luvannet	luvannette
3. luvannee	luvannevat

*Negative.*

1. en luvanne, etc.

*Conditional. Affirmative.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. lupaisin	lupaisimme
2. lupaisit	lupaisitte
3. lupaisi	lupaisivat

*Compound tenses.**Perfect. Affirmative.*

1. olen luvannut, etc.

*Negative.*

1. en ole luvannut, etc.

*Pluperfect. Affirmative.*

1. olin luvannut, etc.

*Negative.*

1. en ollut luvannut, etc.

*Concessive. Affirmative.*

1. lienen luvannut, etc.

*Negative.*

1. en liene luvannut, etc.

*Conditional. Affirmative.*

1. olisin luvannut, etc.

*Negative.*

1. en olisi luvannut, etc.

*Futures. Affirmative.*

- I. olen lupaava
- II. olin lupaava
- III. lienen lupaava
- IV. olisin lupaava

*Negative.*

en ole lupaava, etc.

*Imperative. Affirmative.*

- | <i>Sing.</i> | <i>Plur.</i> |
|--------------|--------------|
| 1. —         | luvatakaamme |
| 2. lupaa     | luvatkaa     |

*Negative.*

- | <i>Sing.</i> | <i>Plur.</i>     |
|--------------|------------------|
| 1. —         | älkäämme luvatko |
| 2. älä lupaa | älkää luvatko    |

*Optative. Affirmative.*

- | <i>Sing.</i> | <i>Plur.</i> |
|--------------|--------------|
| 1. —         | luvatkoon    |
| 2. luvatkos  | luvatkoot    |

*Negative.*

- | <i>Sing.</i>     | <i>Plur.</i>   |
|------------------|----------------|
| 1. —             | älkөөn luvatko |
| 2. ällös luvatko | älkөөt luvatko |

*Infinitives.*

- I. luvata  
luvatakse(ni)
- II. luvatessa  
luvaten
- III. lupaama, etc.
- IV. lupaaminen  
lupaamista
- V. lupaamisilla

*Participles.*

- lupaava
- luvannut

*Passive. Affirmative.*

<i>Ind. Pres. Aff.</i>	luvataan
<i>Neg.</i>	ei luvata
<i>Imp. Aff.</i>	luvattiin
<i>Neg.</i>	ei luvattu
<i>Conc. Aff.</i>	luvattaneen
<i>Neg.</i>	ei luvattane
<i>Cond. Aff.</i>	luvattaisiin
<i>Neg.</i>	ei luvattaisi
<i>Imp. Aff.</i>	luvattakaan
<i>Neg.</i>	älkään luvattako
<i>Opt. Aff.</i>	luvattakoon
<i>Neg.</i>	älkөөn luvattako

*Infinitives.*

II. luvattessa

III. luvattaman

*Participles.**Present* luvattava*Past* luvattu*Present Indicative. Affirmative.**Sing.**Plur.*

1. kokoan or kokoon	kokoamme or kokoomme
2. kokoat or kokoot	kokoatte or kokootte
3. kokoa or kokoo	kokoavat or kokoovat

*Negative.*

1. en kokoa or en kokoo
2. et kokoa or et kokoo
3. ei kokoa

*Imperfect. Affirmative.**Sing.**Plur.*

1. kokosin	kokosimme
2. kokosit	kokositte
3. kokosi	kokosivat

*Negative.*

1. en koonnut, etc.

*Concessive. Affirmative.*

*Sing.*

*Plur.*

- |                 |           |
|-----------------|-----------|
| 1. koonnen (28) | koonnemme |
| 2. koonnet      | koonnette |
| 3. koonnee      | koonnevat |

*Negative.*

1. en koonne, etc.

*Conditional. Affirmative.*

*Sing.*

*Plur.*

- |                          |                           |
|--------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. kokoaisin or kokoisin | kokoaisimme or kokoisimme |
| 2. kokoaisit or kokoisit | kokoaisitte or kokoisitte |
| 3. kokoaisi, or kokoisi  | kokoaisivat or kokoisivat |

*Negative.*

1. en kokoaisi or en kokoisi, etc.

*Compound tenses.*

*Perfect. Affirmative.*

1. olen koonnut (28), etc.

*Negative.*

1. en ole koonnut, etc.

*Pluperfect. Affirmative.*

1. olin koonnut, etc.

*Negative.*

1. en ollut koonnut, etc.

*Concessive. Affirmative.*

1. lienen koonnut, etc.

*Negative.*

1. en liene koonnut, etc.

*Conditional. Affirmative.*

1. olisin koonnut, etc.

*Negative.*

1. en olisi koonnut, etc.



*Futures. Affirmative.*

- I. olen kokoava  
 II. olin kokoava  
 III. lienen kokoava  
 IV. olisin kokoava

*Imperative. Affirmative.*

- |                   |              |
|-------------------|--------------|
| <i>Sing.</i>      | <i>Plur.</i> |
| 1. —              | kootkaamme   |
| 2. kokoa or kokoo | kootkaa      |

*Negative.*

- |                       |                 |
|-----------------------|-----------------|
| <i>Sing.</i>          | <i>Plur.</i>    |
| 1. —                  | älkäämme kootko |
| 2. älä kokoa or kokoo | älkää kootko    |

*Optative. Affirmative.*

- |              |              |
|--------------|--------------|
| <i>Sing.</i> | <i>Plur.</i> |
| 1. —         | kootkoon     |
| 2. kootkos   | kootkoot     |

*Negative.*

- |                 |               |
|-----------------|---------------|
| <i>Sing.</i>    | <i>Plur.</i>  |
| 1. —            | älköön kootko |
| 2. ällös kootko | älkööt kootko |

*Infinitives.*

- I. koota  
 kootakse(ni)  
 II. kootessa  
 kooten  
 III. kokoama or kokooma, etc.  
 IV. kokoaminen or kokoominen  
 kokoamista or kokoomista  
 V. kokoamaisilla or kokoomaisilla

*Participles.*

- Present* kokoava or kokoova  
*Past* koonnut

*Passive.*

- Indic. Pres. Aff.* kootaan  
*Neg.* ei koota

*Impf. Aff.* koottiin  
*Neg.* ei koottu  
*Conc. Aff.* koottaneen  
*Neg.* ei koottane  
*Cond. Aff.* koottaisiin  
*Neg.* ei koottaisi  
*Imp. Aff.* koottakaan  
*Opt. Aff.* koottakoon  
*Neg.* älköön koottako

*Infinitives.*

II. koottaessa

III. koottaman

*Participles.**Present* koottava*Past* koottuOther examples : root *rohkene, to dare.**Pres.* rohkenen, rohkenet, rohkenee*Impf.* rohkenin*Conc.* rohjennen, rohjennet*Cond.* rohkenisin*Imp.* rohkene, rohjetkaa (45)*Inf.* rohjeta, rohjete, rohkenema, rohkenemisen,  
rohkenemaisillani*Part.* rohkeneva, rohjennut*Pass.* rohjetaanRoot *alene, to sink.**Pres.* alenen*Impf.* alenin*Conc.* alennen*Cond.* alenisin*Imp.* alene, aletkaa (45)*Inf.* aleta, alete, alenema, aleneminen, alenemaisellani*Pass.* aletaanRoot *syökse, to cast.**Pres.* syöksen*Imp.* syöksin*Conc.* syöksen (1)

*Cond.* syöksisin

*Imp.* syökse, syöskää

*Inf.* syöstä (1), syöste, syöksemä, syökseminen,  
syöksemäisilläni

*Part.* syöksevä, syösnyt

*Pass.* syöstään

Root säkenöitse, to glitter.

*Pres.* säkenöitsen

*Imp.* säkenöitsin

*Conc.* säkenöinnan (1 & 44)

*Cond.* säkenöitsisin

*Imp.* sökenöitse, säkenöitkää

*Inf.* säkenöitä (1), säkinöite, säkinöitsemä,  
säkenöitseminen, säkenöitsemäisilläni.

*Part.* säkenöitsevä, säkenöinnyt

*Pass.* säkenöitään

Root näke, to see.

*Pres.* näen (28), näet, näkee, näemme, näette, näkevät

*Inf.* näin, näit, näki, näimme, näitte, näkivät

*Conc.* nähnen (41)

*Cond.* näkisin

*Imp.* näe (28), nähkää (41)

*Inf.* nähdä, nähde, näkemä, näkeminen, näkemäisilläni

*Part.* näkevä, nähnyt

*Pass.* nähdään

*Part.* nähty

### *Reflexive Verbs.*

Under this name are comprised a great number of verbal forms, formed by adding certain suffixes to the simple transitive root, many of which are not used in ordinary written and spoken Finnish.

A. Reflexive verbs are formed by adding to the root the suffixes *utu*, *yty*, or *untu*, *ynty*. For instance, *anta*, to give, makes *antautua* or *antauntua*; *teke*, to do, *tekeytyä* or *tekeyntyä*. The *u* or *y* may be assimilated to the last vowel of the root, which gives us forms like *antaantua*, *tekeentyä*. These verbs are conjugated quite regularly.

B. This suffix is also found in the shorter form *u, y*. *Antaa, antauta; löytää, to find, löytyä, to be found; muuttaa, to change (act), muuttua, to change oneself.*

These verbs generally present some peculiarities in their conjugation.

(1) They usually have the old ending *pi* in the 3d sing. indicative present; *antauupi*, but *antau* is also found.

(2) The imperfect ends in *si*; *antausin, antausit, antausi*, etc. This *s* is the remains of an original *t*, showing that the termination *u* is only short for *utu*.

(3) The same *t* is preserved in the infinitive and passive—*antauta, antautaan*.

C. In the Kalevala and the Karelian dialect are found a great quantity of more or less irregular reflexive forms, which are often explained by supposing that the reflexive pronoun *itse* is added to the verb, and then weakened in various ways to *ihe, ite, ik, k*, etc. But this explanation is very doubtful.

For example. From *muuttaa, to change*, comes the form *muuttain, I change myself*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. <i>muuttain</i>	<i>muuttaimme</i>
2. <i>muuttait</i>	<i>muuttaitte</i>
3. <i>muuttaikse, or muuttaihe</i>	<i>muuttaivat</i>

The termination *kse* or *ihe* for the third person sing. is characteristic of these verbs. We also find the termination *me* for the first person sing., *te* for the second, and *se* or *set* for the third.

The concessive is *muuttainen*, and the conditional is *muuttaisin*, etc. The imperative and optative *muuttaitkaan, muuttaitkoon*<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> These forms are ably discussed by Mr. Setälä, in vol. II of the Journal de la Société Finne-Ugrienne, p. 29 ff. He endeavours to prove [and it seems to me with success] that *k* is a suffix of the present tense, and *se* a pronominal affix.

*The Formation of Verbs.*

Verbs are either primitive, that is to say, they consist of a simple root, to which are added the various modal and personal terminations, or they are derivative, that is to say, besides these terminations some formative syllable is added to the root, such as *ta, ele, aise*. It is not easy to assign a precise meaning to all of these terminations, particularly to the commoner, which are used in many and not very definite senses.

Simple roots are either transitive or intransitive in their meaning.

Derivative transitive verbs are formed with the following suffixes, which, however, are sometimes also found in verbs of neuter signification.

(1) *ta, tä*, which must not be confounded with the *ta* of the first infinitive, is added to verbal roots ending in *e*, which is rejected.

*päästää, to let go*, but *päästä*, intransitive. (N.B. The first verb is for *päästätä*, the second for *pääsetä*, so that the *t* of the latter belongs to the termination of the infinitive, but the *t* of the latter to the stem). *Paksuntaa, to thicken*, but *paksuta, to grow thick*; *peljättää, to frighten*, but *peljätä, to fear*; *viertää, to roll down*, transitive or intransitive, but *vierrä* only intransitive.

(2) *tta, ttä*, is added chiefly to roots ending in *u* or *y* which are not rejected. *Juottaa, to give to drink* (*juoda, to drink*); *käyttää, to use* (from *käydä*); *menettää, to cause to go or lose* (*mennä, to go*); *näyttää, to show* (*nähdä, to see*); *tuottaa, to cause to bring, to get* (*tuoda, to bring*); *kuolettaa, to kill* (*kuolla, to die*).

(3) *utta, yttä*, is added mostly to polysyllabic roots: *kävelyttää, to make walk*; *epäilyttää, to make doubt*; *huo-*

*mauttaa*, to make observed; *liikuttaa*, to move, trans. (*liikkua*, intrans.).

Reflexive neuter verbs (*vide* p. 109) are formed with the following suffixes:—

(1) *u* or *y*, added chiefly to dissyllabic roots ending in *a* and *e*, which are rejected, and to polysyllables in *ta* and *oitse*:—*löytyä*, to be found, to exist (*löytää*, to find); *tuntua*, to be felt (*tuntea*, to feel); *muuttua*, to change, intransitive (*muuttaa*, to change, trans.); *täytyä*, to be sufficient or necessary (*täyttää*, transitive); *rakastua*, to be in love with (*rakastaa*, to love, transitive); *kuulua*, to be heard (*kuulla*, to hear).

(2) *untu*, *ynty*, shortened into *utu*, *yty*:—*antauntua*, *antautua*, or *antauta*, to give oneself up (*antaa*, to give); *jakauntua*, *jakaantua*, *jakautua*, or *jakauta*, to be divided (*jakaa*, to divide); *kääriytyä*, to be involved (*kääriä*); *vetäytyä*, to retire (*vetää*).

There is also a suffix *pu*, *py*, used to form a few words of intransitive signification:—*joupua*, to get drunk (*juoda*, to drink); *syöpyä*, to eat one's fill (*syödä*, to eat); *jääpyä*, to remain behind (*jäädä*, to remain); *saapua*, to arrive (from *saada*, cf. 'se rendre'). *Luopua*, *vaipua*, and *viipyä* seem to be formed with the same suffix.

Frequentative verbs are formed with the suffixes *ele*, *ksi*, and *nta*, either separately or combined. It is often hard to determine the exact force of these suffixes. Sometimes they signify a repeated or prolonged action, sometimes they form a kind of verbal diminutive, expressing an action slightly or gently performed, sometimes there is no real difference between the meanings of the original and derived verbs.

(1) *ele* is added mostly to dissyllabic roots ending in *a*, which is lost before the suffix. The first infinitive ends in *ella*, and the verb is conjugated after the third conjugation, e. g. *kysellä*, to ask often (Russian спрашивать), from *kysyä*,

to *ask* (Russian **спросить**); *katsella*, to *observe, or regard*, from *katsoa*, to *look*; *elellä*, to *live*, from *elää*; *hypellä*, to *jump* (**попрыгивать**), from *hypätä* (**прыгать**).

(2) *ksi* is added to the dissyllabic roots, especially to those ending in *e*. *a* and *ä* become *e* before this suffix. *kuljeksia*, to *wander*, from *kulkea*, to *go*; *eleksiä*, to *live*, from *elää*; *anneksia*, from *antaa*, to *give*.

The termination *nta* is rarely found alone, but *ksenta*, *ksentele*, and *ntele* occur, and *ksele* is a frequentative form. *Käyskellä*, to *wander*, from *käydä*, to *go*; *saneskella* (**поговорить**) from *sanoa*, *kuljeskella*, from *kulkea*.

Instantaneous or semelfactive verbs. These, when they have their strict significance, denote an action done once or suddenly, and correspond to Russian forms in **-нУТЬ**. The terminations which have this sense are—

(1) *ahta*, added to dissyllabic verbs which lose their last vowel. *Kilijahtaa*, to *give a cry* (**воскликнуть**); *liikahtaa* (*liikkua*), to *make a movement* (**двинуться**); *elähtää*, to *come, to life* (but also to *live, to grow old*).

(2) *aise*, added to dissyllables in *e*, *i*, *o*, and *u*, which fall out before the termination. *kiljaista*, to *give a cry*; *puraista*, to *give a bite* (*purra*, to *bite*); *halkaista*, to *split*.

Verbal suffixes are also added to nouns, adjectives, and adverbs, the verbs so formed having various meanings which can be easily illustrated from English, where verbs are often formed from substantives or adjectives with or without a suffix being added. In Finnish such derived verbs have been divided into a variety of categories; such as—(1) Instructive, which imply the provision of something with the object denoted by the noun, cf. the English *to butter, to arm*. (2) Factive, denoting the conversion of something into the object or quality denoted by the original word, cf. English *to blacken*. (3) Operative, implying the use or action of the substantive, cf. English *to*

*drop, to boat.* (4) Essive, denoting the existence or activity of something in the capacity of the noun, cf. English *to idle*.

These classes of verbs are not denoted by special suffixes, but the syllables *ta*, *i*, *itse*, *tta*, *sta* are added to form verbs which may have any of these significations.

*Ta* is added to monosyllables and roots which are susceptible of being closed, likewise to trisyllables ending in *ra*, *la*, *na*. Many of the verbs formed with this affix end in *sta*; but the *s* belongs to the root, not to the suffix. Examples—*perustaa, to found* (*perus, a foundation*), *vaatettaa, to clothe* (*vaate-*); *veistää, to cut* (*veitse, a knife*); *poistaa, to drive away* (*pois*); *yltää, to reach* (*yli*); *kumartaa, to bow* (*kumara*); *kiirehtää, to hurry* (*kiire*); *sairastaa, to be ill* (*sairas*).

This termination sometimes becomes *a*, the *t* being lost, e. g. *harjata, to comb*; *kullata, to gild*. Here the *ta* is of course the termination of the infinitive.

Roots ending in *e'* with the aspiration generally suffix *ti* and not *ta*, though sometimes both forms are found. The aspiration becomes *h* before the *t*, *vaatehtia, to clothe*; *kiirehtyä, to hurry*; *tervehtyä, to salute*, etc.

The termination *i* is added to dissyllables ending in *ä*, *e*, *i*, and also to such dissyllables ending in *a* as have *o* or *u* as their first vowel, whereas dissyllables in *a* with *a*, *e*, or *i* for their first vowel, suffix *o*. This rule is analogous to no. 7, and is prompted by a desire to avoid the repetition of the same in succeeding syllables. In all cases the final vowel of the stem is elided before the termination. Examples—*kukkia, to flower* (*kukka*); *sotia, to fight* (*sota*); *munia, to lay eggs* (*muna*); *huolia, to care* (*huoli*); but *sanoa, to speak* (*sana*); *neuloa, to sew* (*neula*); *leipoa, to bake* (*leipä*).

The termination *itse* is added chiefly to trisyllabic roots, but also to dissyllables. In trisyllabic words the final *a* and *ä* of stems always become *o* and *ö* before *i*; in dissyllables the



final vowel sometimes undergoes this change and is sometimes rejected. The verbs so formed are conjugated according to conjugation III, so that the infinitive ends in *oita* for *oitse*. This termination is closely related to the termination *i*, so much so that almost all the words formed with it have double forms. For example, from *satula*, a *saddle*, is formed either the verbal stem *satuloi*; infinitive *satuloida*; present *satuloin*; or the stem *satuloitse*; infinitive *satuloita*; present *satuloitsen*.

Examples of verbs: *iloita*, to be glad (*ilo*); *hedelmöitä*, to give fruit (*hedelmä*); *askaroita*, to work (*askere*); *jumaloita* (*jumala*), to deify; *palmikoita*, to twine (*palmikko*).

*tta, itta*. These terminations are added to monosyllables, to dissyllables ending in *i*, *o* (*ö*), and *u* (*y*), and trisyllables in *a* (*ä*) (which always changes to *o*) and *e*. Dissyllabic and polysyllabic words prefer the termination without *i*. This suffix is the same as that used to form transitive verbs from intransitive, and a large proportion of the verbs which are derived from nouns by its addition are factitive. *Päättää*, to finish (*päätyä*, to end, intransitive); *jäätää*, to freeze; *kirjoittaa*, to write; *lahjoittaa*, to make a present; *hyvittää*, to use well; *syyttää*, to accuse; *kunnioittaa*, to honour.

*sta* or *ista* is added generally to dissyllabic stems, whose final vowel is lost before *i*, though *a* sometimes becomes *o*. *Metsästää*, to hunt; *kärjestää*, to sharpen; *kalastaa*, to fish; *ylistää*, to extol; *yhdistää*, to unite; *äänestää*, to express an opinion, to vote.

Another class of verbs are called translative, and express a change to the state denoted by the noun from which the verb is formed.

Such are formed with the following terminations:—

(1) *ne* is added chiefly to dissyllables, also to trisyllables in *ea* (*eä*), whose final *a* (*ä*), and sometimes *o*, changes to *e*. The verb so formed is conjugated according to the third conjugation,

and the syllable *ne* altogether disappears in the infinitive, which ends in *eta*. *Aleta* (present *ajenen*) *to sink down*; *musteta*, *to become black*; *lähetä*, *to draw near*; *pimetä*, *to grow dark*.

(2) *a* or *ä* is added mostly to dissyllabic roots ending in *i*, which changes to *e*; if added to roots ending in *a*, this vowel generally becomes *o*. It is also added to trisyllables in *ea* (*ä*). *Soeta*, *to become blind* (*sokea*).

A small number of verbs are formed from adjectives by the addition of the suffix *ksi* or *ksu*, before which *a* and *ä* are often changed to *e*. These verbs, sometimes called *ensitive*, express the light in which something is regarded. *Halveksia*, *to hold cheap* (*halpa*); *hyveksiä* or *hyväksyä*, *to find good, to approve*; *pahaksua* or *paheksia*, *to find bad, to be angry at*; *väheksiä* or *vähäksyä*, *to find small or despise*.

## POSTPOSITIONS.

The place of prepositions in other languages is supplied by postpositions, that is to say, by words which follow a substantive (mostly in the genitive or partitive case). These words are not, however, really analogous to the indeclinable prepositions of other languages; they are cases of substantives, some of which are found used in the nominative case. For instance, *ali* (not used as a substantive) means a place under something else. From this are formed the cases *alla*, *alle*, *alta*, etc., which are used as prepositions, e. g. *kissa on pöydän alla*, *the cat is in the place under the table*, that is, *under the table*; *kissa meni pöydän alle*, *the cat went to the place under the table*, that is, *under the table*; *kissa tuli pöydän alta*, *the cat came from the place under the table*, or *from under the table*. A list of these substantives, which are mostly fragmentary in their declensions, is given in the Syntax. A few of them precede the substantive which they govern and can hence be

called prepositions. Such words mostly require that the substantive which they govern should be in the partitive, whereas postpositions follow a word in the genitive.

In these words we may distinguish two classes :—

A. Those which are used as postpositions only in one case, and which have become more or less petrified. Such are *ennen*, *before*; *ilman*, *without*; *kanssa*, *with*; *varten*, *for*.

B. Those which are used in several cases. Some of these are ordinary substantives used in the nominative and other cases. The postpositional usage of such words corresponds to such English phrases 'as in the middle of.' Such are *joukko*, *a crowd*; (*joukossa*, *joukkoon*); *jälki*, *a footstep* (*jälessä*, *jälestä*, *jälkeen*); *kohta*, *a place* (*kohdalla*, *kohdalta*, *kohdalle*, *kohtaan*); *puoli*, *a half* (*puolessa*, *puolesta*, *puolella*, *puolelta*, *puoleen*); *pää*, *a head* (*päässä*, *päästä*, *päänän*, *päällä*, *päälle*, *päältä*).

Others, though clearly substantives in their form, are not used except as particles :—*yli*, *ylitse*, *yllä*, *ylle*, *yltä*; *ympäri*, *ympäriillä*, *ympäriiltä*, *ympäriille*; *alla*, *alta*, *alle*; *edessä*, *edestä*, *eteen*, *edellä*, *edeltä*, *edelle*; *luota*, *luona*, *luo*; *ohessa*, *ohesta*, *oheen*, *ohitse*; *myötä*, *myöten*, and others.

### THE ADVERB.

There are two classes of adverbs in Finnish : (1) Independent adverbs, (2) Adverbial suffixes.

The independent adverbs are often cases of nouns which differ from postpositions only in this, that they are used absolutely, and not in connection with another word. Thus in *käydä kaupungin ympäri*, *to go round the town*, *ympäri* may be described as a postposition, while in *käydä ympäri*, where it stands alone and absolute, it is an adverb. Similarly in *kulkea*

puutarhan ohitse, *to pass by the garden*, ohitse is a postposition, but in pian se menee ohitse, *it will soon be over*, it is an adverb.

These independent adverbs are formed in different ways :—

A. Some are primitive words, whose grammatical formation is not clear, e. g. nyt, *now*; heti, *soon*; aina, *always*; vielä, *yet*; koska, *when*.

B. A second class is formed by the addition of certain suffixes.

(1) Adverbs are formed from adjectives by the addition of sti, perhaps related to the suffix of the elative, sta, e. g. hyvä, *good*, hyvästi, *well*; tietty, *known*; tietysti, *certainly*. Iti is also found (cf. ablative ita); laajalti, *widely*, e. g. se on laajalti tunnettu, *he is widely known*; paksulta, *much or thickly*; syvältä, *deeply*.

(2) ten or ti (cf. prolative tse) is added to pronouns. Täten, *so*; miten, *how*; siten, *so*; muuten, *otherwise*; peräti, *entirely*.

(3) isin (instructive) is added to nouns. Maisin, *by land*; takaisin, *back*.

(4) nne is added to pronouns, and forms adverbs of direction. Sinne, *thither*; tänne, *hither*; minne, *whither*; jonnekunne, *to somewhere or other*.

(5) tusten, tuksin, ksuttain, kkain, are used to form adverbs expressing a mutual relation. Rinnatusten, *side by side*; käsityksin, *hand in hand*; peräksyttäin or peräkkäin, *one behind the other*.

(6) oin, or sometimes ain (probably from ajoin, aika, *time*), is added to the adessive case of pronouns to form temporal adverbs. Silloin, *then*; milloin, *when*; muinoin, *formerly*.

C. Various cases of nouns are used as adverbs :—

*Nominative*—E. g. kohta, *soon*; kyllä, *enough*.

*Accusative or genitive*—*kaulan, long; paljon, much.*

*Partitive*—*ulkoa, outside; salaa, secretly.*

*Inessive*—*tässä, here; missä, where; yhdessä, together; pystyssä, straight, upright.*

*Elicative*—*tästä, hence; mistä, whence; ainoastaan or ainoastansa, only.*

*Illative*—*yhteen, together; tarkkaan, accurately.*

*Adessive*—*tuolla, siellä, there; kaikkialla, everywhere.*

*Ablative*—*kaikkialta, from all sides; muualta, from another place.*

*Allative*—*uudelleen, anew; verkalleen, gradually.*

*Essive*—*ulkona, outside; kotona, at home; huomenna, to-morrow; kaukana, far.*

*Translative*, where *kse* is generally abbreviated to *s*,—*alas, below; ulos, without; myös, also.*

*Abessive*, where *tta* becomes *ti*,—*ääneti, silently; huoleti, without care.*

*Instructive*—*niin, so; kuin, how; tosin, truly; harvoin, rarely; kaksittain, two at a time.*

The second infinitive is also used adverbially in the instructive, *nimittäin* (for *en*), *that is to say.*

Adverbs are also found in the comparative and superlative degree, and are then in the essive, partitive, and translative cases, or adessive, ablative, and allative. The termination *ksi* of the translative often sinks to *s*, or merely the aspirate. *Likempänä, nearer; likempää, likemmäksi* (*-mmäs or -mma'*), *likemmällä, likemmältä, etc.*

The adverbial suffixes are added to the end of other words. The principal are—

*Ko, kö*, which gives an interrogative meaning to the word to which it is affixed, like *ки* in Russian.

*Han, hän, pa, pä*, have a strengthening or affirmative force.

*Ki, kin*, have a copulative sense,—*minäkin, I too.*

## CONJUNCTIONS.

According to their signification conjunctions may be divided into—

(a) *Copulative*—*ja, ynnä, and sekä, also; sekä . . . että, both . . . and; ka, kä (enclitic), and.*

(b) *Disjunctive*—*eli, tahi, tai, taikka, or; joko . . . tai, either . . . or.*

(c) *Adversative*—*mutta, vaan, but; kuitenkin, toki, however.*

(d) *Inferential*—*sentähden, siksi, therefore; siis, niin-muodoin, consequently; niin, so, accordingly.*

(e) *Causal*—*sillä, for; kun, koska, because.*

(f) *Comparative*—*kuin, than; ikäänkuin, as, if.*

(g) *Temporal*—*kun, when; jahka, heti kuin, as soon as; ennenkuin, before that; sittenkuin, after that.*

(h) *Final and Consecutive*—*että, jotta, that.*

(i) *Conditional*—*jos, if.*

(j) *Concessive*—*vaikka, jos, kohta, even if.*

(k) *Interrogative*—*ko, kō (enclitic), tokko, josko, vai, is it . . . or (like the Latin 'utrum' . . . 'an').*

It will be noticed that these conjunctions are in great part merely cases of pronouns or adjectives, e. g. *sentähden, kuin, sillä.* *Ynnä* appears to be a contracted essive from *yksi*; and *ja* and *toki* to be borrowed words.

## INTERJECTIONS.

1. *Of joy*—aha, ahaa, hei.
2. *Laughter*—haha, hihi.
3. *Grief*—ai, aiai, voi, oi, voivoi.
4. *Mockery*—ähä, kutti, piti, piti-piti.
5. *Astonishment*—no, noh, ha, kah, kas.
6. *Disgust*—hyi, hyihyi, ui, uiui.

## SYNTAX.

FINNISH sentences are formed of the same elements as those found in other European languages—subjects, predicates, objects, attributes, etc.; but, as the simplest phrases offer certain peculiarities, it is well, before analysing the use of the various forms, to give some general rules.

### *The Subject.*

I. The Subject is in the nominative case if it is *total*, that is to say, if something is predicated of the whole of the subject. Thus, *ihmiset kuolevat, men die*, because the verb applies to the whole race of men; *lapset tulevat, the children come*, that is to say, *all the children in question*. Personal pronouns and a substantive in the singular always are in the nominative, when subject to a sentence. In other words, the subject is put in the nominative, (1) when the proposition is universal. *Ihmiset kuolevat, men die*; *linnut lentävät, birds fly*. (2) When it is preceded by the definite article or other determinative adjective in English. *Sotamiehet läksivät, the soldiers set out*; *nämät pojat ovat ahkerat, these boys are industrious*. (3) When the subject is a single definite substantive or pronoun, which is really the same as the case of an universal proposition.

II. But the subject is put in the partitive case, if something is predicated, not of its whole extent, but of part of it. Thus, one says *viini on hyvää, wine is good*; *viini on pöydällä, the wine is on the table*; but *viiniä on pöydällä, there is some wine on the table*. Similarly, *miehet tulevat, the men are coming*; but *miehiä tulee, some men are coming*.



It is to be noticed—

(1) That in negative phrases, where the verb is *ei ole*, *ei näy*, *ei kuulu*, *ei tunnu*, etc. (which are generally rendered in English by such phrases as 'there is no,' or 'there is not'), the subject is always in the partitive, e.g. *siellä ei ole ketään*, *there is nobody there*; *tässä joessa ei ole kaloja*, *there are no fish in this river*.

(2) The partitive can only be the subject to an intransitive verb, because the mere fact of any word being the subject to a transitive verb implies that the whole or a definite part of the subject is regarded as acting. Thus, one can say, *varkaita tuli talooni*, *some thieves came into my house*; but *some thieves stole my things* must be rendered by *varkaat* (or *jotkut varkaat*) *varastivat tavarani*.

The subject can be altogether omitted if it is a pronoun of the first or second person, and also in certain impersonal expressions, like *tuulee*, *it is windy*. In such sentences as *on mahdotonta tehdä sitä*, *it is impossible to do this*, the verbal noun is to be regarded as the subject.

Such sentences as *one says*, or *people say*, where the subject is indefinite, are expressed in Finnish either by the passive verb (v. p. 181), or by the third person plural, no noun or pronoun being employed to represent the subject. *Sanovat pääskysten jo tulleen*, *they say the swallows have already come*; *Venäjällä hakkaavat paljo metsää*, *they cut a great deal of wood in Russia*.

The third person sing. is also used in this sense: *kesällä elää vaikka ilmalla*, *in summer one can live easily* (literally, *on air*); *tekee minkän jaksaa*, *one does as much work as one can*.

The second person sing. is also used in this impersonal sense, much as in Russian. *Kävelet kadulla, et näe mitään, mutta yht'äkkiä putoat kuopaan*, *one walks along the street, sees nothing, and suddenly tumbles into a hole*.

*The Predicate.*

The verb of a sentence usually agrees in number with the subject, if the latter is in the nominative. But

(1) If the subject is in the partitive, either sing. or plural, the verb is always in the sing. The real subject of the verb in such cases is not the partitive itself, but such a word as *joukko*, *paljo*, or *vähä* understood before it.

(2) If the subject is a noun with a numeral (which in Finnish requires the partitive after it), the verb is also in the singular.

(3) When the verb *olla* is used with the adessive in the construction rendered by the verb 'have' in English, it always remains in the 3rd sing., no matter what the subject may be.

(4) In proverbs, the Kalevala, and popular speech generally, a singular verb is very frequently found with a plur. nominative. Such an irregularity is clearly rendered much easier and less glaring by the analogy of the cases quoted above.

The verb *olla*, *to be*, is sometimes omitted, especially in proverbial phrases.

*Oma maa mansikka, muu maa mustikka, one's own land is a strawberry, foreign lands are only blackberries. Ei pyyssä kahden jakoa, a partridge is not enough for two.*

If the predicate takes the form of an auxiliary with a noun or adjective, this latter may be put in several cases.

I. In the nominative, when the complement expresses a quality inherent in the subject, without any reference to other things.

II. But it is put in the partitive if the subject is regarded as referred to a class in common with which the subject shares the quality in question.

Thus, *veitset ovat terevät* means *these knives*, or *the knives are sharp*; but *veitset ovat teräviä* means *knives are sharp*, or

*belong to the class of sharp things.* **Kivi on kova, the stone is hard, i.e. not a soft stone; kivi on kovaa, stone is a hard substance.**

It is noticeable that—

(a) If the subject is in the sing., and denotes a living being, the complement must be in the nominative; one must say **ihminen on kuolevainen, not kuolevaista.**

(b) If the subject denotes a part of the body, the complement must be also in the nominative: **Hiukset ovat mustat, the hair is black. Kädet ovat tarpeelliset, hands are necessary.**

III. The complement is put in the essive if it denotes the state in which a thing is at a given time. Thus, **isäni on kipeänä, my father is (now) ill; isäni on kipeä, my father is an invalid. Hän on pappi, he is a clergyman; but hän on jo kauan ollut pappina, he has long been a clergyman. Suomenmaa on osa Venäjän valtakuntaa, Finland is a part of the Russian empire; but tähän vuosisataan asti Suomenmaa oli osana Ruotsin valtakunnasta, till the beginning of this century Finland formed part of the kingdom of Sweden.** Often there is little difference between the nominative and essive. Thus one can say either **sydän on suruja täysi, or täynnä, the heart is full of woe; but täynnä** gives a more precise and literal idea of fullness than **täysi.**

IV. With the other auxiliaries, signifying to become, or pass into a state (**tulla, ruveta, muuttua, etc.**), the complement is put in the translative. **Ilma muuttuu lämpimäksi, the weather grows warm. Poika rupesi palvelijaksi, the boy began to be a servant. Ukko käy heikoksi, the old man gets weak. Hän joutui työmieheksi, he became a workman.**

Such sentences as *it is impossible to go, or it is necessary for you to go*, may be rendered in Finnish as **mahdotonta on mennä, or tarpeellista on että menette; but in both cases the real**

subject is the infinitive, or the sentence with *että* which replaces it.

In such sentences the adjective, combined with the verb *olla*, can be put either in the partitive or in the nominative; but it is very hard, not only to give rules for the employment of the two cases, but even to state the exact difference of meaning between them. As has been seen above, *kivi on kova* means *the stone is hard*, but *kivi on kovaa*, *the stone belongs to the class of hard things*. The same distinction appears to prevail in the case under consideration, but, as the difference is very subtle, it is not surprising that it is often hard to trace. On the whole, the partitive is more usual, because the use of the nominative implies, strictly speaking, that the subject and the complement are co-extensive. But the nominative is more definite, inasmuch as it vaguely implies the existence of particular personal or temporal conditions. Thus, *parasta on mennä* is the equivalent of *it is best to go*; and it is perfectly logical to use the partitive, as clearly it is not meant that the terms *going* and *best* are co-extensive. But *paras on mennä* means rather *the best thing for us under the circumstances is to go*; and in this case the use of the nominative is also logical, because the two terms are co-extensive. It can be easily imagined that with so slight a distinction the nominative and partitive are used almost indifferently in most cases. Thus, it is equally correct to say *on surkea nähdä sinua tuossa tilassa*, or *on surkeata*, *it is sad to see you in this position*. But it is noticeable that—

(1) *Parempi* and *hyvä* are always used in the nominative. *Parempi on odottaa*, *it is better to wait*. *Hyvä on olla terveenä*, *it is good to be healthy*. In the case of *parempi*, at any rate, this is quite natural, as there can hardly be said to be a class of better things without reference to particular circumstances. But this point cannot be pressed, as other comparatives are used in the partitive.

(2) In such phrases as *on mähdotonta*, *it is impossible*; *onko luvallista*, *is it allowable*; *onko mahdollista*, *is it possible*? the partitive is nearly always used.

### *The Object.*

The object, like the subject, can be either total or partial. It is regarded as total when the whole of the object is represented as affected by the action of a transitive verb, and partial when only a part of it is affected by such action. Thus in *mies ampui linnut*, *the man shot the birds*, the object is total; but in *mies ampui lintuja*, *the man shot some birds*, it is partial, because in the first case no birds are thought of except those shot, who all come under the action of the verb, whereas in the second there is a vague reference to all existing birds, of which some only have been shot. Further, the object is regarded as partial whenever the action of the verb is continuous or incomplete, because the action is, so to speak, extending over the object, but has not yet embraced the whole of it. Thus, in *minä kirjoitan kirjettä*, *I am writing a letter*, the object is regarded as partial; but in *minä olen kirjoittanut kirjeen*, *I have written a letter*, it is total. The object of a negative verb is always in the partitive.

The object may be put—

1. In the accusative;
2. In the partitive;
3. In the nominative.

*By accusative is meant that case which corresponds in the singular with the genitive, and in the plural with the nominative.*

I. The total object of an active finite verb, in any mood but the imperative, is put in the accusative, unless it is a cardinal number.

Hän myi hevosen, *he sold the horse.* Veljeni panee rahat taskuun, *my brother puts the money in his pocket.* Ammuin pyyt metsässä, *I shot the partridges in the wood*; but ammuin viisi pyytä, *I shot five partridges.*

II. The Object is put in the partitive if it is partial, whatever the verb may be. From what has been said above it will be seen that this implies that the partitive must be used:—

(1) When the object is strictly speaking partial and denotes a part of something, not a whole. Antakaa minulle maitoa, teetä, etc., *give me some milk, some tea, etc.* Hän söi leipää ja voita, *he ate some bread and butter.* Isä antoi rahaa pojalle, *the father gave the boy some money.*

(2) When the verb is negative. En saanut kirjaa, *I did not receive the book.* Me emme tunne ystävääsi, *we do not know your friend.* Älä revi kirjaa, *don't tear the book.* Lasta ei rakasteta, *the child is not loved.*

(3) When the action of the verb is continuous and not finished. Hän lukee kirjaa, *he is reading the book.* Seppä takoo rautaa, *the smith is hammering the iron.* Hän juuri toimittaa sitä asiata, *he is just now doing the business.* Often there is a difference in the meaning of a verb, according as it is followed by the accusative or partitive; the former denoting that the action is more complete. Hän löi koiraa, *he struck the dog*; but hän löi koiran, *he killed the dog.* Hän repi kirjaa, *he tore the book*; but repi kirjan, *he tore the book to pieces.* A great many verbs never take a total object, because from the nature of their signification, their action cannot be definite and complete, but must be regarded as continuous. This is especially the case with verbs expressing a feeling. Niin rakasti Jumala maailmaa, *so God loved the world.* Neuvoisin ystävääni olemaan menemättä, *I advised my friend not to go.* Odotin häntä kaksi tuntia, *I waited two hours*

for him. *Seurasin häntä Helsinkiin asti, I followed him to Helsingfors. Vihatkaatte pahaa, hate evil.*

III. The object is also put in the nominative—

(1) If it is the total object of an imperative. *Anna leipä pojalle, give the boy the bread. Vie hevonen talliin, take the horse to the stable.*

(2) If it is the total object of an infinitive, which depends on an imperative, and sometimes in other cases (*vide p. 185*). *Käske tuoda ruoka pyötään, order the food to be put on the table. Antakaa lähettää sähkösanoma, have a telegram sent.*

(3) If it is a cardinal number. *Maksoin kolme ruplaa, I paid three rubles.*

(4) As has already been stated, the so-called passive is an impersonal verb with its total object in the nominative and its partial object in the partitive. For a detailed explanation, *vide p. 181*.

An intransitive verb can sometimes take an accusative after it to express the result of its action. *Äiti makasi lapsensa kuoliaaksi, the mother lay on her child and killed it (lit. slept her child dead). Juoksi itsensä väsyksiin, he ran himself tired. Hän joi itsensä siaksi, he drank himself silly. Puhui suunsa puhtaaksi, he spoke out his mind.*

*Of the Agreement of Substantives and Adjectives  
with one another.*

As a rule, an adjective agrees with a noun in case and number.

*Hyvä mies, a good man; hyvät miehet, good men. Näissa suurissa kaupungeissa, in these large towns. Köyhille lapsille, to the poor children.*

There are, however, a considerable number of exceptions to this rule.

(1) Adjectives, as well as substantives, from which they can hardly be distinguished, enter very readily into composition as the first member of a compound word, and then are not declined, e.g. *mustameri, the Black Sea. Isokyrö, Vähäkyrö*, names of villages. Cf. such expressions as *mennyt vuonna, rankka sateella, tuiskusäällä, pakkasilmalla*.

(2) Some adjectives are never declined: *aika, kelpo, oiva, ensi, viime, eri, joka, koko, nyky, pikku*.

*Ensi maanantaina, on next Monday. Kelpo miehelle, to the good man. Eri osat, separate parts. Joka paikassa, in every place.*

(3) A certain number of adjectives and pronouns, instead of following the regular construction, take after them an instructive plur. or a partitive sing., e.g. *olla pahoilla mielin, to be in a good temper; tulla hyvin mielin, to get into a good temper. Samalla ajoin, at the same time. Kaikissa paikoin, everywhere. Omilla korvin or silmin, with one's own eyes or ears. Näillä seuduilla, in this part of the world.*

(4) The words *kulta, dear; parka, raiska, raukka, riepusti, poor, wretched; vaivainen, poor; vainaja, dead; paha, pahainen, polo, polonen, poor*, though written separately, form a sort of compound with a substantive, which they may either precede or follow. Only the last of the two words is declined. Thus, *poika polosella oli kiire, or polo pojalla, the poor boy had to hurry. Älä suututa äiti kultaani, or kulta äitiäni, do not anger my dear mother. Minä en nähnyt lapsi parkaani, I have not seen my poor child. Woi minua mies parkaa, woe is me, poor man.*

As will be perceived from the rules given above (p. 124), an adjective predicated of a substantive does not always agree with the latter, but may be in the partitive, essive, or translative, when the substantive is in the nominative.



A substantive in apposition to another is usually in the same case.

It is to be noted that in such expressions as *the town of Petersburg, the Emperor Alexander*, the Finnish idiom conforms to the English in this respect, that if the object is inanimate, the proper name is put in the genitive. *Helsingin kaupunki, the town of Helsingfors. Suomenmaa, Finland.* In the case of a river either the nominative or genitive can be used. *Nevan joki or Neva joki, the river Neva.*

But if the proper name denotes an animate object, or a ship, it is put in the nominative, and remains in that case, even though the word in apposition to it is inflected. *Keisari Suuriruhtinas Georg Aleksandrovitschin kanssa, the Emperor with the Grand Duke George Alexandrovitch. Professori Alquistin kuolema on suuri vahinko Suomelle, the death of Professor Alquist is a great blow to Finland.*

\*When a word in apposition denotes the state of the subject at a given time, and not a general characteristic, it is put in the essive case. *Poikana hän oli sairas, as a boy he was ill.*

#### *The Article.*

There is no article in Finnish. Sometimes *yksi (one)* is used to represent the indefinite article, and in poetry the definite article is frequently expressed by a pronoun, such as *tuo or se*.

The rules given above will have made it clear, however, that under some circumstances Finnish can mark by the use of the cases the same distinction which we mark by the article. It may be said roughly that the nominative generally represents a substantive with the definite article in English (this would be still more true of French), and the partitive a substantive without an article. Thus, *linnut ovat puussa* means *the birds are*

*in the tree*; but *lintuja on puussa, there are birds in the tree*. *Ammuin lintuja* is *I shot some birds*; *ammuin linnut, I shot the birds*. So, too, *kivet ovat kovat* means *the stones are hard*; while *kivet ovat kovia* means rather *stones are hard*. It would, however, be misleading to state such rules too dogmatically, as doubtless many instances could be found where the use of the nominative and partitive would not correspond to that of the article in English. Naturally, a language which has no articles and no gender is obliged to construct sentences differently from tongues which have these distinctions, and Finnish sentences, particularly in the older and simpler literature, are generally more precise than ours.

#### THE USE OF THE CASES.

The majority of the cases of the Finnish noun have, at any rate in their origin, a local meaning. Of these local cases two obvious groups are found, one called the interior local cases (inessive, elative, and illative), the other the exterior cases (the adessive, ablative, and allative). Another group is formed by the essive, partitive, and translative, which, however, do not hang together so closely as the cases above cited, inasmuch as the primary local meaning has in all of them been obscured by metaphorical uses. In all these groups the first member (inessive, adessive, essive) denotes originally rest in a position; the second (elative, ablative, partitive) motion from; the third (illative, allative, translative) motion to. From the original local meaning, all the cases, except the allative, come to indicate time. It may be roughly said that the first member denotes present time, the second past time, and the third future time. They are also used in a metaphorical sense, in which case the

first members of the groups denote the state in which anything is, the second the state from which anything passes, and the third the state into which anything passes. In the first and second groups there is a close correspondence in the metaphorical use of the various members of the group: that is to say, if one member can be used metaphorically to express existence in a state, the others can be used to express a transition from or to it. Most of the cases have, however, in addition to these common uses, others which are peculiar to themselves and are not shared by the other members of the group.

The usage of the first and second group also shows many coincidences. It is generally said that the first group denotes local position with regard to the interior, and the second with regard to the exterior of the object. In the present state of the language, however, the distinction in this form is not very clearly observed, as will be seen by the examples given. The second group has a tendency to denote persons rather than things, whereas the first is used more of inanimate objects. The third group is mainly used in metaphorical senses. It is noticeable that there are many coincidences between the uses of the partitive and the elative.

Most of the other cases call for little comment. The instructive is used mostly adverbially, but plays a considerable part in the construction of sentences, and is likely to be troublesome to a beginner on account of its resemblance to the genitive in form. The prolative is rarely used. The comitative and abessive express respectively the presence and absence of an object. The former is not much used, but the peculiarities of the Finnish construction have caused the latter to in some ways take the place of a negative.

As has already been stated in the Accidence, it would appear that in some of the cases two forms have been merged in one. Thus it appears that the adessive represents (1) a local case,

(2) an instrumental. So, too, the genitive represents (1) a case denoting the relation existing between objects, (2) a dative. The nominative is also used (1) as a real nominative, (2) as an accusative, having perhaps lost the termination in this latter case.

To understand Finnish syntax it is of the greatest importance to remember that there is no real distinction between nouns, adjectives, adverbs, prepositions, infinitives, and participles. In fact, all the words of a sentence, except the forms of a finite verb (and a few particles which have become petrified) are nouns, and as such are susceptible of declension, so that the significance of the cases has an importance extending over almost the entire grammar.

#### *Nominative.*

Most of the uses of the nominative have already been indicated.

I. It is employed as the subject of a sentence if the subject is mortal. The subject of a transitive verb is always considered as mortal (*vide* p. 122). *Ihmiset kuolevat, men are mortal.*  
Seppä myi hevosen, the smith sold the horse. *Mitä sijat maksavat? what do the places cost?*

II. It also is used in the predicate, under the conditions mentioned, page 123. *Silta on leveä, the bridge is wide.* *Ystäväni tytär on seitsemän vuotias, my friend's daughter is seven years old.*

III. It is used as the direct object after an imperative, or an infinitive depending on an imperative (*vide* p. 128). *Lyökämme käsi kätchen (Kal. i. 21).* *Päästä piika pintehestä (Kal. i. 173).* *Kun solmit ystävyyttä, tee aina umpisolmu, when you tie the knot of friendship, make it hard to untie.*  
*Tuokaa minulle kahvi, give me the coffee.* *Pankaa tämä kirje postiin, post this letter.*

IV. When the passive form of the verb is used, the subject (or more properly object) is put in the nominative, if it is total. *Hän saatetaan kotia, he is conducted home (vide p. 182).*

V. The nominative is used as the vocative. *Oi ukko ylijumala! Welii kulta, weikkoseni, kaunis kasvinkumppalini!*

VI. The nominative absolute is frequently used. Kal. xvi. 192-3. *Tuonen hattu hartioilla, Manan kintahat käessä, the hat of death on thy head, and the gloves of death on thy hands. Ei vahinko tule kello kaulassa, misfortune does not come with a bell round his neck. Harvoin on se mies piippu poissa suusta, this man is rarely without a pipe in his mouth. Hän makaa ulkona pää paljaana, he sleeps out of doors with his head bare.*

#### *The Partitive Case.*

The original meaning of this case seems to have been motion from a place, and traces of this signification are found in the forms *kotoa, ulkoa, kaukaa, takaa, tyköä*, and *luota*. *Tulla ulkoa, to come from out of doors; nähdä kaukaa, to see from far.* The partitive is also apparently used locally in such expressions as *tulkaa tätä tietä, come this way; minä käyn tietä, I go by the road; he kulkivat matkaansa, they went on their way.* Perhaps, however, these might be explained by supposing that the intransitive verbs *tulla, käydä*, etc. take a cognate object. The use of the partitive of the participle passive (p. 198) to denote 'after' is noticeable.

Hence the case passes not unnaturally to mean what is taken from, or forms part of a thing.

I. A substantive preceded by words which express a quantity or measure is put in the partitive. *Joukko ihmisiä, a crowd of men; naula lihaa, a pound of meat; paljo rahaa, much money; vähä voita, a little butter.*

Similarly a cardinal number, if it is the subject of a sentence, is followed by the partitive sing. of the word which it qualifies. **Kolme poikaa, three boys; seitsemän veljeä, seven brothers.** In the same way we have, **kaksi kymmentä, two tens or twenty.** But if the word qualified by the numeral would not be in the nominative in ordinary European languages, the two agree in case (*vide* p. 172).

II. The word expressing quantity is omitted and the partitive stands alone as the subject of the sentence. This construction can often, though not always, be rendered by the word 'some' in English, or by 'de' with the article in French. **Leipää on pöydällä, there is some bread on the table** (*il y a du pain sur la table*). It is to be noticed that in this construction the verb of which the partitive is the subject must be intransitive, and is always in the singular, though the subject should be in the plural. **Onko teillä vaatteita? have you any clothes?**

The subject of a negative sentence is put in the partitive, in cases where we should say in English,—'There is not' or 'there is no.' **Ei ole täällä ihmisiä, there are no men here.** In such a sentence as **en ole merilohia, syvän aallon ahvenia** (*Kal v. 122*), *I am not a salmon*, the partitive must be explained as indicating a class, *I am not one of the salmones.* In ordinary Finnish the partitive is only used in this way with determining adjectives. Thus one says, **En ole vaimo, I am not a woman;** but **En ole niitä valmoja jotka unhattavat miehensä, I am not one of the women who forget their husbands.**

III. The object is put in the partitive whenever it is not total (*vide* rules given above, p. 127). **Juoda kahvia, to drink some coffee; poika lukee kirjaa, the boy is reading the book.** The object of a negative verb is always regarded as partial. **Poika ei antanut kirjaa, the boy did not give the book. Hevonen ei jaksanut vetää kuormaa, the horse could not carry the load.**

V. As stated in the rules given p. 123, the complement of a sentence is put in the partitive when it expresses a whole of which the subject is a part. The partitive is particularly used to express the substance of which a thing is made. Sormus on kultaa, the ring is gold. Kieli on lihaa ja hampaat ovat luuta, the tongue is flesh, and the teeth are bone.

VI. In a sentence expressing comparison the word *kuin* (*than*) can be omitted, and the word which follows the comparative be put in the partitive. Kuu on pienempi kuin aurinko, or kuu on pienempi aurinkoa, the moon is smaller than the sun. Pietari on suurempi Helsinkiä, St. Petersburg is larger than Helsinki. Eikö Abanan ja Pharpharan wirrat Damaskussa ole kaikkia Israelin vesiä paremmat? Are not Abana and Pharphar, rivers of Damascus, better than all the waters of Israel?

VII. Adjectives expressing height or size require the partitive. Kirkon torni on kaksi sataa jalkaa korkea, the church tower is 200 feet high. Joki on kaksikymmentä jalkaa syvä, the river is 200 feet deep. Silta on puolta virstaa pitkä, the bridge is half a verst long.

VIII. The partitive is used in salutations, exclamations, etc., where it is to be explained by the omission of some word. Hyvää iltaa, hyvää huomenta (I wish you) good morning; kiitoksia, thanks; terveisiä, my compliments; mahdotonta! impossible! kauheaa, horrible! So too in such expressions as voi päiviäni.

#### *Accusative.*

I. The direct object of a finite active verb, if not in the imperative, is put in the accusative, when the action of the verb is regarded as total (*vide* p. 126). Isä ostaa kirjan pojalle, the father buys the book for the boy. Kauppamies saa rahat, the merchant receives the money.

II. The accusative is also used to denote duration of time. Viivyn päivän, viikon, muutamat viikkokaudet. Itki illat, itki aamut, yöhyet ennemmin itki, Kal. v. 7, 8. It is also used in answer to the question, how many times, or which time. Minä olen täällä ensimmäisen kerran, *I am here for the first time*. Mina olen ollut Helsingissä muutamat (useat, monet) kerrat, *I have been many times at Helsingfors*.

But expressions with *joka*, such as *joka kerta*, *joka päivä*, are used in the nominative. Olen joka kerta matkustanut meritse, *I have several times travelled by sea*. Hän on minun nähnyt harva kerta, *he has rarely seen me*. Minä ratsastan joka päivä, *I ride every day*.

#### Genitive.

I. The genitive in Finnish is used with nouns—

(1) As the subjective genitive. Alqwistin teokset, *the works of Alquist*; kaupungin kadut, *the streets of the town*.

(2) As the objective genitive. Vanhempain rakkaus, *love for one's parents*; jumalan pelko, *fear of God*.

(3) As the determinative genitive. Helsingin kaupunki, *the town of Helsingfors*; kunnon mies, kunnon valkea, *a good man, a good fire*.

II. Adjectives ending in *-inen*, which express age, measure, character, etc., take the genitive. Vanha, *old*, follows the same rule. Sen muotoinen, *of this kind*; sormen pituinen, *of a finger's length*; venäläisen luontoinen, *a Russian in character*. Pullo on kolmen lasin vetoinen, *the bottle holds three glasses*. Susi on koiran näköinen, *a wolf looks like a dog*. Miehen peukalon pituinen, waimon waaksan korkeuinen (Kal.ii. 115). If the word in the genitive is an adjective, numeral, or pro-



noun, it is written as one word with the word on which it depends. *Pahankurinen, ill-behaved; hyvántapainen, well-behaved,*

### III. The genitive is also used—

(1) With certain impersonal verbs, such as *täytyy, pitää, tulee, käskää, sopii, kelpaa, tarvitsee*, and with the verb *olla*, when this latter is used with certain adjectives. *Minun pitää lähteä ulkomaalle, I must go abroad. Hänen sopii viipyä täällä. Subjectisanan tulee olla nominativissa tai partitivissa, the subject must be in the nominative or partitive. Parempi minun olisi, parempi olisi ollut, better had it been for me. Ei hänen ollut vaikea päästä ulos, he had no difficulty in getting out.*

(2) A good many words expressing some state or feeling are used with the verb *olla*, and a genitive of the person who feels. *Minun on jano, I am thirsty; minun on nälkä, I am hungry; minun on tarve, I must. Hänen on aika mennä, it is time for him to go. Similarly, Rikkaiden on velvollisuus antaa köyhille, it is the duty of the rich to give to the poor. Sotamiehen on pakko mennä vaaraan, it is the duty of a soldier to go into danger. In these latter sentences the genitive seems quite natural in our idiom, but they are really closely analogous to the phrases given above. In the dialect spoken about St. Petersburg it is usual to say *minulla* (not *minun*) on *jano, nälkä.**

Some of the examples quoted above support the idea (v. p. 24), that there is an old dative in Finnish ending in *n*, which has become confused with the genitive. It is hardly possible to explain otherwise such expressions as *Jumalan kiitos, thank God; Anna minun olla rauhassa, leave me in peace.*

### IV. The genitive is used with the infinitives and participles

to denote the agent. Examples of this use will be found in the description of the use of those parts of the verb (p. 184, ff.).

This use is also found after caritive adjectives. *Miekan miehen käymätöntä* (Kal. xxviii. 257), *untouched by the sword of man.*

#### THE INTERNAL CASES—INESSIVE, ELATIVE, AND ILLATIVE.

The inessive, elative, and illative are sometimes called the interior cases, because they express existence in and motion from or to the interior of an object. The adessive, ablative, and allative, on the other hand, are called the external cases, because they indicate rest on and motion from or into the exterior surface of an object. However, this distinction is not always kept up in the use of the cases, and the choice of the interior or exterior case in a given phrase seems often to be regulated by idiom or caprice, rather than by a reference to the original meaning.

##### *Inessive.*

I. The proper meaning of this case is existence in an object. *Mies istuu tuvassa, the man sits in the hut.* *Parempi kala suussa kuin haava päässä, a fish in the mouth is better than a wound in the head.* *Vene kulkee vedessä, the boat moves in the water.* Here the inessive is used, because, though motion is indicated, it is motion *within* a given space, and not to or from a given point.

There is much irregularity as to the use of the exterior and interior cases of local proper names. (1) Names ending in *la* always take the interior cases for euphony. *Urjalassa*, not *Urjalalla*. (2) Names of countries not ending in *maa*, and foreign names generally take the interior cases; but the word *Venäjä, Russia,*

is always used in the forms *Venäjäällä, -ltä, -lle*. (3) Names of countries ending in *maa* are generally used in the exterior cases, but the interior cases are used in speaking of things being found in the country. *Olin Saksanmaalla, I was in Germany*, but *Saksamaassa on paljo sotamiehiä, there are many soldiers in Germany*. But *Suomenmaa, Finland*, is always used in the interior cases.

Besides this strict use, the inessive is employed in a variety of expressions either metaphorically or in a loose local sense. Most of such phrases are quite obvious, and can be rendered in English by the preposition 'in.'

II. It is used to express the time within which anything occurs. *Viidessä viikossa, in five weeks. Valmistuuko työ kahdessa päivässä, finish the work in two days. Pietarista Hatsinaan voi matkustaa puolessa toista tunnissa, one can go from Petersburg to Gatchina in an hour and a half.*

III. From expressing the place in which the subject is, it is used by a natural transition to express the surroundings, state, or condition of anything. Thus it is employed in speaking of the weather. *Olin ulkona tuulella ja sateella, I was out in the wind and rain. Minä ajoin hevosella lumessa ja tuisussa, I drove in a snow storm.*

Also in a number of metaphorical expressions. *Olla eksyksissä, to be in error; olla hyvässä kunnossa, to be in good condition; olla hyvässä turvassa, to be safe; olla hyvässä voimissa, to be prosperous. Te olette oikeassa ja minä olen väärässä, you are right and I am wrong. Olen ollut pari tuntia kovassa päänsivistyksessä, I had a violent headache for a couple of hours. Kello on epäjärjestyksessä, the watch is out of order. Siinä tapauksessa, in that case. Kaikki on mieli melkeässä, Ajatukset arvoisessa (Kal. v. 177).*

IV. In a number of expressions the inessive is used where the adessive would seem more natural to express close connection between two objects, particularly in the case of one thing being fixed or hung on another. *Kala on ongessa, the fish is on the hook. Takki on naulassa, the coat is hung on the nail. Pitäkää hattu päässä, keep your hat on your head. Hänellä ei ollut saappaita jalassa, he had no boots on his feet.*

V. It also expresses the occupation in which one is engaged. *Poika on työssä, the boy is at work. Cf. Olla pidoissa, häissä, to be at a banquet or marriage.* Notice such idiomatic phrases as *olla kalassa, to be fishing; olla heinässä, to be making hay; olla marjassa, to collect berries.* It is noticeable that the verb *käydä, to go to, or frequent,* is generally followed by the inessive. *Käydä kirkossa, to go to church; käydä katsomassa, to go to sea.*

VI. It is also used to express that an object is covered or soiled with some liquid. *Nenänsä on veressä, his nose is bleeding. Silmät ovat vesissä, the eyes are full of tears. Sinun otsas hiessä pitää sinun syömän leipää, in the sweat of thy face shall thou eat bread. Cf. also the expression Järvi on jäässä, the lake is frozen.*

VII. It is used to express that certain qualities reside in a man. *Hänessä on jaloutta, he is noble (nobility is in him). Sinussapa jo onkin koko mies, you are a man worth the name. Ei ole lapsessa heinän niittäjätä, a child cannot be a haycutter. Teissä on kuume, you are feverish.*

#### *Elative.*

As the inessive expresses properly rest in something, so the elative expresses motion from the interior of something. Many of its uses correspond to those of the inessive already described.

I. The strict literal use is to denote motion from an interior. 17 Mies lähti tuvasta, the man went out of the hut. Lohi hyppäsi merestä, *the salmon leapt out of the sea.* Metsästäjä tuli kotia metsästä, *the huntsman came home from the forest.* Kaatakaa olut pullosta lasiin, *pour the beer out of the bottle into the glass.*

II. In expressing time, the elative is used to denote the beginning of a period—that is to say, the period is regarded as setting forth from a given date. Pääsiäisestä on seitsemän viikkoa Helluntaihin, *from Easter to Whitsuntide is seven weeks.* Eilisestä illasta alkaen, *since last night.* Me läksimme matkaan aamusta, *we set out in the morning* (beginning from the morning). En ole nähnyt häntä Joulusta saakka, *I have not seen him since Christmas.* Siitä hetkestä, *from that hour.*

III, IV, V, VI. In all such expressions as those quoted under these headings for the inessive, the elative can be used when cessation *from* an occupation or condition, or purification *from* any defilement is to be expressed. Tulin kotiin tuiskusta ja tuulesta, *I came home from the snow and wind.* Kadota silmistä, näkyvistä, *to disappear from view.* Päästä pulasta, *to get out of difficulties.* Poika oti lakin päästensä, *the boy took the cap off his head.* Pese nenäsi verestä, *wash the blood off your nose.* Pyyhi silmäsi kynelistä, *dry your eyes.* Järvi lähti jäästä, *the lake became free of ice.* Tulla pois työn teosta, kalasta, *to cease working or fishing.*

VII. The elative is also used by a natural transition to express separation or difference from. Minun on vaikea päästä virasta vapaakai, *it is hard for me to get away from my work.* Mies ei saa luopua vaimostansa, *a man cannot be separated from his wife.* Lätin kieli on kokonaan eroavainen

**Suomen kielestä, the Lettish language is perfectly different from Finnish.**

Besides these uses, which are parallel with those of the inessive, the elative has a variety of other significations. These mostly arise in a quite intelligible manner, from the idea of motion from, taken in a metaphorical sense.

VIII. In many phrases the elative is used almost like the partitive, that is to say, it denotes one or more persons or things taken or selected from a number. **Nuorin veljistä, the youngest of the brothers.** **Urhoollisin sotilaista, the bravest of the warriors.** **Laatokka on suurin Europan järvistä, Ladoga is the largest lake in Europe.** **Yksi näistä vaimoista, one of these women.**

There is, however, a slight difference in the meaning of the elative and partitive in such expressions, inasmuch as the former always implies a certain part of a given quantity which is in the mind of the speaker. Thus one says **kolme sisarta, three sisters**, a merely numerical expression. But **kolme sisaristani** means *three of my sisters*. So **naula voita** means *a pound of butter*; but **naula voista**, *a pound of the butter*, referring to a particular kind or mass of butter.

IX. From denoting the starting-point, the elative is used to express the origin or cause of anything, or the material from which a thing is made. **Kuolla myrkystä, to die of poison.** **Hän puhisi vihasta, he snorted from anger.** **Poika oli kylmästä köntistyneenä, the boy was numb with cold.** **Tyhjästä loi Jumala maailman, God created the world from Chaos.** **Hänestä tuli kelpo sotilas, he made a good soldier.** **Ei lapsesta laulajaksi, a child can't be a singer** (proverb). **Hän on hyvästä perheestä, he is of good family.** **Sanasta sana syntyy, kypenestä maa kytee, one word gives birth to another, and the world catches fire from a spark.** **Sormus on tehty kullasta,**

*the ring is made of gold.* Munan kuori on kovasta aineesta, *the shell of an egg is of a hard substance.* Venäjän valtio on kokoonpantu monenlaisista kansallisuuksista, *the Russian empire is composed of many nationalities.*

In this sense it is often used to denote the object, particularly with words denoting speaking or some feeling. For instance, puhua asiasta, *to speak of a thing*, the thing being regarded as the point from which a conversation is started. Kiitoksia kysymästänne, *thanks for your question.* Siitä voitte olla varma, *you may be sure of it.* Mitä pidätte Suomen kielestä? *How do you like Finnish?* En välitä kenestäkään, *I don't care for anybody.* Älkää surko huomisen päivästä, *take no thought for the morrow.*

N.B.—There is a curious use of *minusta* so denote 'in my opinion, as far as I am concerned.'

X. Somewhat similar is the use of the elative in expressions denoting price. The Finnish idiom is to say *möin kirjan markasta*, *I sold the book for a mark*; *ostin kirjan markasta*, *I bought the book for a mark*; and *sain markan kirjasta*, *I received a mark for the book.* That is to say, 'I bought a book from a mark,' the price being regarded as the origin of the transaction. *Mitä tahdotte viikossa tästä huoneesta?* *how much do you want per week for this room?* *Silmä silmästä ja hammas hampaasta*, *an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth.* *Kaup-pamies on myönyt tavaransa kalliista*, *the merchant sold his goods dear.*

XI. The elative is used to express the object in which any one is rich or poor. *Rikas rahasta*, *rich in money*, that is to say, money is regarded as the cause of the riches. *Kaivo on tyhjä vedestä*, *the well is empty of water.* *Huoneet olivat täydet väestä*, *the rooms were full of people.*

XII. The elative is also used in a variety of expressions, in which the cause or commencement of an action is emphasized by an idiom different to our own. Thus one says, not to seize by the ear, but from the ear, *pitää korvasta*; *sidottu käsistä ja jaloista*, *bound hand and foot*. *Damokleen miekka riippui hivuskarvasta*, *the sword of Damocles hung by a hair*, and metaphorically, *saada kiini rikoksesta*, *to convict of crime*. *Sanasta miestä, sarvesta härkää* (proverb), *a man is held by his words and an ox by the horns*.

By an idiom of the language verbs denoting to find, or seek, and also often verbs of seeing and hearing, are followed by an elative where we should use an expression implying rest in a place. *Mistä hänen löysit?* *where did you find him?* *Milloin hyvänsä tuli huoneeseen, tapasi hänen aina lukemasta*, *whenever one went into the room, one always found him reading*.

The elative comes to be used much as the accusative of respect in Latin, to mark the part in which anything is affected. *Mies on kipeä silmistänsä*, *the man is ill from his eyes*. *Hän on kömpelö käsistä*, *he is clumsy with his hands*. *Raukea jaloista*, *foot-sore*. *Koivu on tuuhea latvasta*, *the birch has spreading branches at the top*. *Veitsi on terävä kärestä*, *the knife has a sharp edge*.

#### *Illative.*

The original meaning of the illative is motion into the interior of an object, from which it passes into the general sense of motion to. Most of its uses are parallel to those of the inessive and elative. *Mennä kouluun, kirkkoon*, *to go to school or to church*. *Lähteä Amerikkaan, Siperiaan*, *to go a journey to America, to Siberia*. *Merimies putosi laivalta veteen*, *the sailor fell from the ship into the water*. 21

It must, however, be noticed that a good many actions are regarded as implying motion to, in Finnish, which by our



idiom are followed by prepositions signifying rest in. Thus one says, *Hevoset seisautuivat pihaan*, *the horses stopped in the court*. *Sananlennätin tolpat ovat pystytetyt tien viereen*, *the telegraph wires are laid along the road*. *Me perustamme koulun kaupunkiin*, *we founded a school in the town*.

The most singular instance of this is, that the verbs signifying to remain or to leave invariably take this case, or the allative. *To stay at home* is *jäää kotiin*, the original meaning of the verb having apparently been to go to a place and stay there. Similarly *jättää*, *to leave behind*, and *unhottaa*, when it is used in the same sense, take the illative. *Jätin hattuni teatteriin*, *I left my hat in the theatre*. *Unhotin rahakukkaroni kotiin*, *I left my purse at home*.

## II. The illative is used in two ways to denote time.

A. It denotes the *end* towards which a period is regarded as advancing, and can be translated by *until* or *to*. *Pääsiäisestä on seitsemän viikkoa Helluntaihin*, *it is seven weeks from Easter to Whitsuntide*. *Kuu kiurusta kesään*, *it is a month from the time when the lark sings to summer* (proverb). *Vieläkö on pitkältä Jouloon?* *is it still long till Christmas?*

In this sense it is often used with the preposition *hamaan*, or the postpositions *asti* and *saakka*. *Tähän päivään saakka*, *up till that day*; *myöhään yönön saakka*, *till late at night*; *hamaan viimeiseen päivään asti*, *till the day of one's death*.

B. The illative is also used idiomatically to express the space of time during which anything has *not* taken place. *En ole nähnyt häntä kahteen vuoteen*, *I have not seen him for two years*. *En ole syönyt kunnolleen kolmeen päivään*, *I have not eaten properly for three days*. *Ei ole ollut näin kaunista syksyä miesmuistiin*, *there has not been such a fine autumn in the memory of man*.

C. It is also used to express the period of time in which an action is performed. *Ansaitsee viisi ruplaa viikkoonsa, he earns five roubles a week.* In this use the suffix is nearly always added to the case, but the words *aikaan, aikoihin, and puoleen* (in compounds), and *seutuun* are used in expressing time loosely. *Siihen aikaan, or näihin aikoihin, at that time.* *Joulun seutuun, about Christmas time.* *Talven puoleen, in winter time.*

III, IV, V, VI. Like the inessive and elative, the illative is used in a variety of metaphorical expressions, when entrance into a state or condition is denoted. *Joutua eksyksiin, to go into error, to go astray.* *Tulla toimeen, to get on, manage satisfactorily.* *Ei se käy laatuun, that is impossible.* *Joutua hukkaan, to perish.* *Ajoi hevosen uuvuksiin, he rode his horse till it was tired.* So also it is used in speaking:—

(1) Of occupations, which are begun. *Hän meni työhön, he went to his work;* and also such expressions as *mennä kalaan, to go fishing;* *mennä marjaan, to go berry gathering.*

(2) Of the place on which anything is put. *Upseeri pani hattunsa naulaan, the officer hung his hat on the peg.* *Vedä sappaat jalkaan, to put on one's boots.*

(3) Of liquids. *Hän löi nenänsä vereen, he gave him a bloody nose.* *Järvi meni jäähän, the lake froze.*

VII. The illative also expresses the use to which anything is put, or the purposes for which it is capable of being used. The origin of this sense of the case is clearly shown by the derivation of the verb to use, *käyttää*, which is the causal form of *käydä, to go*, and means *to make a thing go in a certain direction.* *Hän käytti rahansa hyvin tarkoituksiin, he employed his money for good purposes.* *Tuhlasi aikansa turhuuteen, he wasted his time.* So also *Hän sopii kaikkeen, he can do every-*

*thing.* Lappalaiset ovat kykenemättämiä sotapalvelukseen, *the Laps are not fitted for military service.* Mustalainen ei pysty työhön, *a gipsy is not a good worker.* Hän on valmis kaikkeen hulluuteen, *he is ready for any folly.*

VIII. Somewhat similar is the use of the illative to express the object or desired goal of an action. Isä kehoittaa poikaa ahkeruuteen, *the father exhorts the boy to be diligent.* Similarly kehoitta iloon, etc. Kasvattakaa lapsenne Jumalan pelkoon ja hyviin tapoihin, *bring up your children to fear God and behave properly.* Minä neuvoin ystävääni kärvällisyyteen, malttavaisuuteen, *I advised my friend to be patient, or prudent.* Kenraali innostutti sotamiehet urhouteen, *the general exhorted his soldiers to bravery.*

IX. The illative is further used with verbs expressing feeling, chiefly those formed with *u* or *y*, the idea being apparently that the feeling passes from the subject to the object. For instance, olla rakastunut johonkin, *to be in love with some one.* Cf. the Russian idiom ОНЪ ВЪ НЕЕ ВЛЮБЛЕНЪ. Olen kyllästynyt näihin riitoihin, *I am weary of these quarrels.* Siihen voitte luottaa, *you may be sure of this.* Hän ei mielistynyt heidän neuvoonsa ja tekoonsa, *he was not pleased with their advice and doings.* Tyydytkö siihen? *are you satisfied with this?*

X. There is a curious idiom by which in certain phrases the illative seems to be used to express the agent or cause of an action. Kuolla nälkään, *to die of hunger;* kuolla veteen, *to be drowned.* Nukkui nuoret, nukkui vanhat Wäinämöisen soitantohon, *old and young were thrown into sleep by the songs of Wäinämöinen.* Murehisin murtumatta, huolihiin katoamatta (Kal. v. 216-7).

The idea in these phrases seems to be that the subject of the verb passes into the power of whatever is denoted by the illative.

XI. The illative is also used to express likeness. This is quite natural with such a verb as *verrata*, to compare. E. g. *Verrattuna meihin, on hän onnellinen, compared to us, he is happy.* The verb *vivahtaa*, to be like, also takes this case: *vivahtaa veljeensä, he is like his brother*; but the original meaning of the word is apparently physical motion, to glance quickly by or into. By a similar idiom the verb *tulla*, to come, with the illative means to resemble. *Hän tulee isäänsä, he is like his father.* The use of the simple verb *olla*, to be, with this case to express likeness is however truly singular, and is apparently to be explained only by analogy. *Lapsi on isäänsä, the child is like its father.* It is, however, exactly parallel to the Russian expression *ОНЪ ВЪ ОТЦА, ВЪ МАТЬ.* Cf. *Vesa kasvaa kantohonsa, the young sprout grows like the parent stem* (proverb).

XI. The illative expresses the limit which a number reaches. *Luku nousi kahteen-sataan, the number reached two hundred.* *Siellä oli lapsia viiteenkymmeneen, there were as many as fifty children.*

From this use the illative is also used to denote price. *Myydä halpaan hintaan, to sell cheap*; *myydä kalliisen hintaan, to sell dear.* *Tässä on omenoita kymmeneen kopekkaan, here are apples for ten copecks.*

#### THE EXTERNAL CASES—ADSSIVE, ABLATIVE, AND ALLATIVE.

The external cases correspond in their general significance and employment to the internal cases already described, only while these latter denote rest within and motion to or from the interior of an object, the former in their strict meaning imply rest on and motion to or from the surface of an object. But as

may be seen by the examples this distinction is not always very strictly observed. The external cases have a tendency to denote animate objects.

*Adessive.*

I. The adessive primarily denotes the place on which an action takes place. Poika istuu lattialla, *the boy sits on the floor.* Tuskin voin olla jaloillani, *I can hardly stand on my legs.* Hän asuu tällä kadulla, *he lives in this street.* Millä paikoilla? *whereabouts?* Saksan maalla kasvaa hyviä viinirypäleitä, *in Germany good grapes grow.* Kivet laikkui lainehilla, *Somerot vesillä souti* (Kal. xliv. 261, 2).

II. The adessive is also used to mark time, when the period is not definitely specified by a cardinal number or otherwise. Päivällä, *in the day, by day*; yöllä, *by night*; keväällä, *in spring*; kesällä, *in summer*; syksyllä, *in autumn*; talvella, *in winter*; (but viime kesänä, *last spring*, because the time is determined by the adjective).

Kalat tärpäävät kesällä, *fish bite in spring.* Aamulla anivarahin, *very early in the morning* (Kal. iv. 303). Kysyi työtä iltaisella, *he asked for the work in the evening* (Kal. xxxii. 6).

III. Like the inessive the adessive is used in a loose or metaphorical sense to denote the external circumstances under which anything takes place. Thus it is used of the weather. Kuivalla säällä, *in dry weather*; tuulella, *in windy weather.* Minä palasin kotiin sateella, *I returned home in the rain.* Joka tyynellä makaa, se tuulella soutaa (proverb), *he who sleeps in a calm, rows in a wind.*

Olla hereellä or valveella, *to be awake.* On tulolla sade, *it is going to rain.* Olen menolla, *I am going.*

And in some cases where according to our ideas the circumstances denoted are distinctly internal, e. g. olla hyvällä tai

pahalla mielellä, *to be in a good or bad humour*. Olla hyvällä päällä, *to feel courageous*. Cf. Kal. xlv. 269, 270. Nuoret naiset naurusuulla, Emännät ilolla mielin.

In particular it is thus used with verbal nouns to express that an action is being undertaken. Kirjan käännös on tekeellä (or tekeilla), *the translation of the book is being made*. Kangas on kuteella, *the cloth is being woven*. (27)

IV. By a closely analogous use the adessive signifies the occupation in which any one is engaged (cf. the use of the inessive in this sense). Olla ongella, nuotalla, *to be engaged in fishing with a hook or net*.

This use is particularly frequent in the case of games or meals. Olla päivällisellä, *to be at dinner*; olla aamiaisella, *to be at breakfast*; olla koppisilla, *to be playing ball*. Lapset ovat piiloisilla, *the children are playing hide and seek*.

V. The adessive is also used to signify with, near, or in the house of (French *chez*). Poika on meillä, *le garçon est chez nous*. Hänellä on vieraita, *he has guests staying with him*. Vietin kolme päivää eräällä ruotsalaisella herralla maalla, *I spent three days with a Swedish gentleman in the country*.

From an extension of this use it comes to denote possession, and in combination with the olla replaces the verb *to have*, which does not exist in Finnish. Minulla on kirja, *I have a book*. Hänellä on luunkolotus, *he has the rheumatism*. Mikä este sinulla oli? *what hindered you?* (28)

In this idiom the verb is always in the third person sing., even though the substantive is in the nominative plur. Isällä on harmaat hiukset, *the father has white hair*. Onko teillä saksia? *have you a pair of scissors?* Hevonen on rengillä, *the man has the horse*. Hyvällä on nimiä paljo, pahalla tapoja paljo, *good has many names and evil many shapes*. Jumalalla on onnen ohjat, Luojalla lykyn avaimet (proverb),

*God has the reins of fortune, the Creator has the keys of luck.*  
Cf. Kal. xliii. 337. Jumalall' on ilman wiitta, Luojalla avaimet onnen.

VI. It also denotes the price at which a thing is bought or sold. *Minä ostin kirjan kahdella markalla, I bought a book for two marks. Kauppamies möi kaikki tavaransa suurella voitolla, the merchant sold all his goods at a great profit. Ostin matot huokeammalla (hinnalla), kuin niiden arvo on, I bought these carpets for less than they are worth.*

VII. Besides these various significations which can be deduced from the primary meaning of rest on, the adessive has quite another use, viz. as an instrumental to denote the means or the object by which an action is accomplished. It would seem that two originally distinct forms have been confused in the case as it at present exists in Finnish, though it might be possible to derive this instrumental meaning from the metaphorical uses quoted under III. *Näin sen omilla silmilläni, I saw it with my own eyes. Oillä päivät jatketaan, virsillä vähät oluet (proverb), the days are lengthened by the nights, and a little beer goes further if one sings. Elä kourulla kohenna, kärryksellä käännyttele (Kal. xxiii. 401-2)—Kansalla karhukin kaadetaan (proverb).*

VIII. From this use is derived another, signifying the way in which anything is done. *Ilolla, joyfully. Monella tavalla, in many ways; ei millään tavalla, in no way at all. Sen teen mielelläni, I do it with pleasure.*

#### *Ablative.*

I. The ablative expresses motion from the surface of anything. *Lapsi putosi pöydältä, the child fell from the table. Ei köyhä korkealta kaadu, luudan päältä lattialle, the poor cannot have a great fall: only as high as a besom from the floor (proverb).*

Korkealta kakko lenti . . . Allit aalloilta syviltä, Joutsenet sulilta soilta, *the eagle flew from high, the wild duck from the deep waves, the swans from the watery marshes.*

II. It is also used in various expressions denoting time.

A. In such sentences as 'year after year,' 'day after day.' In Finnish the first word is put in the nominative and the second in the ablative. Päivä päivältä hän tulee kipeämmäksi, *day by day he gets worse.* Myrsky kiihtyy hetki hetkeltä, *the storm grows stronger every hour.* Odotan häntä tunti tunnilta, *I expect him every hour.*

B. In sentences expressing money earned in a given time. Hän saa kaksituhatta markkaa vuodelta, *he receives two thousand marks a year.* Maksavat rengille viisitoista ruplaa kuukaudelta, *the servant is paid fifteen roubles a month.*

C. The time from which anything begins. Kaupunki on viime vuosisadalta, *the house dates from the last century.* Niinkuin asetus tammikuun viidenneltä päivältä määrää, *according to the provisions of the decree of January 5.*

Similarly—Kello kuudelta aamulla nousin työtä tekemään, *I begin to work at (that is, beginning from) six o'clock in the morning.* Tulee pimeä jo kello neljältä, *it gets dark at four o'clock.*

III. It is used analogously to the adessive (No. IV), to express cessation from an occupation, game, or meal. Miehet tulivat ongelta, *the men came home from fishing.* Tulimme päivälliseltä, *we came from dinner.* Lapset lakkasivat sokkosilta, *the children stopped playing blind man's buff.*

IV. The ablative denotes motion from a person or from his house. Vierahat tulivat teiltä, *the strangers came from you.* Palvelija tuli isännältä, *the servant came from his master.*



Cf. *Ostin tavaroita kauppareheltä, I bought some goods of the merchant.* So also *Minä sain äidiltäni kirjeen, I received a letter from my mother.* *Kysyivät häneltä, they asked of him.*

V. From the idea of separation the ablative comes to denote the person who loses anything or from whom anything is hidden, defended, etc. It becomes in fact very nearly what is called the 'dativus incommodi' in Latin Grammar. *Häneltä kuoli äiti, his mother died (died from him).* *Ei Jumala kiellä lapsiltaan iloa, God does not forbid joy to his children.* *Ei tytär salaa äidiltänsä mitään, the daughter hides nothing from her mother.*

VI. The cause which prevents an action is put in the ablative. *Tyttö ei päässyt kotoa astiain pesulta, the maid could not leave the house because she had to wash the things.* *En jouda kesäisiltä kiirehiltä, I cannot come on account of the work that has to be done in summer.* *En voinut nukkua koiran haukunnalta, I could not sleep on account of the dogs barking.*

VII. The ablative is also used to denote the part or quality with respect to which anything is predicated of an object. *Hän on hyvä tavoiltansa, he has a good disposition.* *Munat ovat väriltään ja suuruudeltaan erilaisia, eggs are of different colours and sizes.* *Poika on iältään jo kymmenvuotias, the boy is ten years old (in his life).* *Tyttö on solakka varreltaan, the girl has a graceful figure.* *Ukko on vielä ketterä jalalta, the old man is still quick-footed.* *Tunnen hänen näöltä, I know him by sight.* *Mies on Matti nimeltä, the man is Matthew by name.*

VIII. It is apparently to this use that must be traced such expressions as *maistua hyvältä, karvaalta, to taste good or bitter.*

Verbs which express the impression made by an object on the senses are generally followed by an adjective in the ablative describing the nature of the sensation. If it is remembered that

the distinction between the adjective and substantive is very slight, we may explain such a phrase as näyttää kauniilta as *looks with regard to beauty*, that is, *looks beautiful*.

Examples—*Hän näyti Saksalaiselta, he looked like a German.*  
*Miltä nyt tuntuu? how do you feel now? Mansikka maistuu makealta, strawberries taste sweet. Se näyttää luonnollisemmalta, it seems more natural.*

#### Allative.

I. The allative expresses motion on to or into the neighbourhood of an object. *Lapsi putosi lattialle, the child fell on to the floor.* *Tahdotteko viedä minun Uudelle Kadulle? will you show me the way to New Street? Lähen Pohjolan tuville, Lapin lasten tanterille, I go to the dwellings of the North, to the plains of the Laplanders.*

II. It expresses also the external circumstances of an action when those circumstances are regarded as not already existing, but as to be entered on. *Koska saatte työnne alkeille? when will your work be begun? Minä panen kankaan kuteille, I put the stuff to be woven.*

III. Like the adessive and ablative it is used of occupations, games, or meals, in which one engages, but always with the idea of entering on or beginning. *Menkäämme ongelle, let us go and fish. Emäntä on käskenyt ruoalle, the mistress of the house has asked us to dinner. Olen kutsuttu kahville, I am invited to take coffee. Lapset rupeevat pillosille, the children begin to play hide and seek.*

IV. From meaning motion into the neighbourhood of an object or to the house of anyone (e. g. *Meille tuli vieraita, guests came to see us*), it comes to be used as a dative to express the remote object of an action. *Äiti antoi kirjan pojallensa, the mother gave a book to her son. Jumala on laupias syntisille,*

*God is merciful to sinners. Olen kiittollinen teille, I am obliged to you; olen ottanut itselleni vapauden, I have taken (for myself) the liberty. Minun on mahdoton määrätä aikaa takaisin tulolleni, I cannot fix the date of my return.*

V. The allative is sometimes, though rarely, used in the way described under the ablative IX. Ilma näyttää kaunille, *the weather looks fine.* Cf. Kal. xli. 23. Jo kävi ilo ilolle, Riemu riemulle remahti, Tuntui soitto soitannalle, etc.

#### *Abessive.*

The abessive expresses the absence of anything.

Joka syyttä suuttuu,

Se lahjatta leppyy,

*He who is angry without a cause is reconciled without a reward (proverb).*

Joka kuritta kasvaa,

Se kunniaa kuolee,

*He who grows up without education dies without honour (proverb), Olkaa huoletta, don't trouble yourself (be without care). Elä suihki sutsunatta, Eläkä räämi rätsinättä, Elä liiku liinaietta (Kal. xxiii. 215), go not without raiment, wander not without a shirt, stray not without a kerchief. Vanhempien tiedotta, without the knowledge of one's parents. Muitten avutta, without the help of others.*

For emphasis the particle ilman is placed before the abessive.

Ilman tau'in tappamatta,

Ottamatta oivan surman,

*Without being slain by disease or taken by a natural death (Kal. xvi. 178, 9).*

The use of the abessive of the third infinitive is particularly frequent, see below, p. 193.

*Essive.*

I. The original use of the essive is locative, but this only survives in some adverbial expressions: *ulkona*, *out of doors*; *kaukana*, *far*; *luona*, *near*; *takana*, *behind*; *kotona*, *at home*; *läsnä olla*, *to be present*; *kokonansa*, *altogether (in its entirety)*; *keskenänne*, *keskenänsä*, etc., *between you, them*; and such expressions as *olla rannempana*, *to be near shore*; *olla sisempänä*, *to be inside*.

II. From this use comes that denoting a definite period of time during which something happens; *tänäpäpä*, *to-day*; *huomenna*, *to-morrow*; *Maanantaina*, *Tiistaina*, etc., *on Monday, Tuesday*, etc. *En ole maannut kolmena viimeisenä yönä*, *I have not slept there the last three nights*. *Ihmiset käyvät pyhänä kirkossa*, *people go to church on a Saint's day*. *Eip' on toiste tullutkana*, *Ei toiste sinä ikänä*, *She never came again, Never again in this life* (Kal. v. 138). *Jo päivänä muutamana huomenna moniahana* (Kal. v. 53).

III. From a metaphorical use of this local meaning the essive comes to denote the character or state in which the subject of a sentence is. It is used thus—

(1) As the predicate. *Isäni on pappina*, *my father is a priest*.

**Taivas köyhän kattona,**

**Maantie permantona** (proverb),

*The sky is the roof of the poor man and the high road his floor.*

**Mikä on asiana?** *what's the matter?*

(2) As the appositional case.

**Minkä nuorena oppii**

**Sen vanhana muistaa** (proverb),

*What one learns young one remembers when old. Nuorna vitša väännettävä, one should bend the bough while it's young* (proverb). *Poikana minä en tuntenut häntä, as a boy I never knew him.*

*Translative.*

I. The original meaning of the translative, like that of the illative and allative, seems to be motion to; but this only survives in a few adverbs. *Ulos, out of doors* ('foras'); *luoksi or luo', to*; *taakse or taa', backwards*; *sisemmäksi, inwards*; *rannemmäksi, nearer shore*.

II. In a temporal sense the translative is used to express the time in which a thing *is to be* (not *was*) accomplished. *Poika rupeesi palvelukseen vuodeksi, the boy entered service for a year*. *Hän jäi meille yöksi, he stayed with us for the night* (the event, though in the past, is regarded from the point of view when it was future).

It also expresses a limit of time: *tämä kirja valmistuu jouluksi, the book will be ready by Christmas*. *Voinko saada ne ensi maanantaiksi? can I have them by next Monday?*

It is also used to express place in numerical order. *Ensiksi, first, in the first place*; *toiseksi, in the second place*.

III. The most frequent signification of the translative is metaphorical, viz. the state into which anyone or anything passes. It can be used thus after transitive and intransitive verbs. *Tulla köyhäksi, to become poor*. *Ilma ei muutu selkeäksi, the weather does not become clearer*. *Ne tulevat valmiiksi, they will be ready*. *Myrsky käy raivoisaksi, the storm grows high*. *Emäntä leipoi jauhot leiviksi, the housewife baked the flour into bread*. *Itse tuon sanoiksi virkkoi, (frequent phrase in Kalevala), himself thus put this into words*. *Kaupunki paloi tuhaksi, the town was burnt to ashes*.

It is also used as a complement after verbs of naming, calling, considering, perceiving, etc. (v. p. 201), the idea being that in consequence of the action of such verbs the object passes into a new state. *Kutsutte minun mestariksi ja Herraksi, ye call me master and Lord*. *Näkivät hänen kuolleeksi, they saw*

he was dead. **Älkää pahaksi panko**, *don't take it amiss*. **Tunnen itseni hyvin sairaaksi**, *I feel very ill*. The verb pitää is peculiar in always taking the essive, and not translative, after it. E. g. **Pitää jotakin häpeänä**, *to think a thing a shame*.

IV. It also expresses the purpose or use for which anything serves. **Hän kelpaa opettajaksi**, *he is fit for a schoolmaster*. **Mitä voin tehdä palvelukseksenne?** *what can I do for you (for your service)?* **Olkoon tämä teille opiksi**, *let this be a lesson to you*. **Yhtiö lasten suojelemiseksi**, *a society for protecting children*. **Juon viiniä terveydekseni**, *I drink wine for' my health*. **Juoda onneksi**, *to drink to some one's health*.

By an extension of this use the translative is used almost like the essive (cf. the dative of the complement in Latin). **Se on hänelle häpeäksi**, *he ought to be ashamed of it (it is for a shame to him)*. Compare also **miksi?** *why?*

The translative can be used idiomatically in such phrases as **He speaks Finnish well for a foreigner**, or **considering that he is a foreigner**, **hän puhuu suomea hyvin ulkomaalaiseksi**. So too, **Laiva on pureksi hyvä kulkemaan**, *the ship goes well for a sailing-boat*. **Poika on liian viisas ikäiseksensä**, *the boy is very clever for his age*. A good example of this use is found in Kal. v. 63 ff. **Sileähk' on siikaseksi**, **Kuleahka kuujaseksi**, **Evätöin emäkalaksi**, **Ihala imehnoksiki**, **Pää-rivatoin neito-seksi**, **Vyötöin veen on tyttöseksi**, **Korvitoin kotikanaksi**.

VI. This use is analogous to the adverbial use of the translative, which is frequent. For instance, **pahaksi** (or **kovaksi**), **hyväksi onneksi**, *fortunately, unfortunately*. **Osaksi**, *partly*. **Elää herroiksi**, *to live en grand seigneur*.

With this may be compared its use to express the language in which anything is written. **Kirja on käännetty suomeksi**, *the book is translated in Finnish*. So **Saksaksi**, *in German*; **Ruotsiksi**, *in Swedish*; **Venäjäksi**, *in Russian*.

42

ni-  
P. 55. 58

43

*Comitative.*

44  
I. The comitative is used to express the person in whose company, or the object in connection with which an action takes place. It is always used in spoken Finnish in the plural, even if only one person or object is referred to, but in the old language and in printed books the singular is sometimes found. It nearly always takes a pronominal affix. Mies meni pois vaimoinensa, *the man went away with his wife*. Vetivät verkon kaloinensa, *they drew in the net with the fish*. Otti lapsen äitinensä, *he took the child with its mother*. Kesä on tullut ihanine ilmoinsensa, *the summer is come with beautiful weather*. Sata miestä miekkoinensa, *a hundred men with their swords* (Kal. xi. 100).

45  
When the comitative is combined with an attribute, the latter frequently ends in *n*, not *ne*. For instance, järvet saoin saarinensa, *lakes with a hundred islands* (Kal. xxiv. 459). Ei hänen sovi tulla tänne tuhmin tapoinensa, *he ought not to come here with his foolish ways*. Älä tule sisään likaisin jalkoinesi, *don't come in with your dirty feet*.

Copious examples of this case will be found in Kalevala, xxiv. 444-462. Jää nyt pirtti terveheksi, Pirtti lautakattonesi, etc.

*Instructive.*

46  
I. The instructive is used to express the instrument or the manner in which an action is performed. The instructive of substantives is chiefly used of parts of the body and in modern Finnish always in the plural. Paljain jaloin, *with bare legs, barelegged*. Poika meni ulkos paljain päin, *the boy went out bareheaded*. Omin käsin, *with one's own hands*; omin silmin, *with one's own eyes*. Ristissä käsin, *with hands crossed*. Kaikki huonekalut ovat sikin sokin, *all the furniture is*

*topsy-turvy*. *Kulkea jalan, to go on feet. Alla päin, with one's hanging down* (Kal. iii. 501 and following lines). *On meillä valta omin luvin tulla huoneeseen, we have authority to come into your room without asking leave. Kahden ynnä, both together; yksin mielin, with one accord; yksin syntyi Wäinämöinen, Wäinämöinen was born alone.*

It is noticeable that generally when this case is used, either a noun with an adjective is found or two nouns both in the instructive. Thus one can say *kissa repi ovea kynsin hampain*, whereas if only one word were used it would be better to use *kynsillä or hampailla*.

The instructive rarely takes pronominal suffixes. Kal. ix. 507, 509, *En liiku omin lihoini . . . En väiky omin väkini.*

II. The instructive of adjectives is frequently used adverbially to express manner.

(1) The instructive *singular* of an adjective is used adverbially to qualify another adjective or adverb in the positive. *Tavatoman kaunis, exceedingly beautiful; kauhean ruma, horribly ugly; hyvin hyvä, very good; tämä yö oli hirveän pitkä, the night was terribly long.*

(2) The instrumental *plural* of adjectives in the comparative or superlative is used to define verbs. *Puhu nopeammin, speak quicker; aurinko paistaa kirkkaammin, the sun shines brighter.*

III. The instructive plural is also used in a temporal sense, and denotes an indefinite or recurring period of time. Thus *linnut laulavat illoin, aamuin, the birds sing in the morning, in the evening* (whereas if a definite morning or evening is meant the *essive* must be used). In this sense the termination *sia* is often used, which is really the instructive plural of an adjective with a nominative *nen* formed from the noun. Thus *mae*



18 me  
 alamme työn aamuisin kello kahdeksasta, *we begin to work at eight in the morning.* Iltaisin rupeamme aikaisemmin maata, *we go to bed earlier in the evening.* Hän tekee talvisin kaupamatkoja, *he makes business journeys in the winter.* Onko teillä tapa valvoa öisin? *are you in the habit of not sleeping at night?*

This same ending is added to substantives in a sense somewhat analogous to the prolative. *Minä menen rautateisin, I go by rail.* *Sotaväki matkusti osaksi maisin osaksi merisin, the troops travelled partly by land, partly by sea.*

#### *Prolative.*

This case is rarely used, and in fact has no sense when formed from any but substantives expressing some kind of local position. It expresses motion by or over anything, and is chiefly employed in adverbial expressions, and generally in the plural. *Tulla meritse tai maitse, to come by sea or land.* *Järven ranatse, along the shore of the lake.* *Niemen nenitse, round the promontory.* *Aalloitse, by sea.* *Minä kylvän kyyhättelen Luojan sormien lomitse, I sow by the finger of God (lit. through the interval of the fingers).* Kal. ii. 297 (*Mehiläinen lenti*) *Otavaisten olkapäitse, Seitsentähtyen selitse, (the bee flew) over the shoulder of the great bear, over the back of the seven stars.*

### THE ADJECTIVE.

Most of the peculiarities of the Finnish Adjective have been already noticed. The various rules for its concord with a substantive have been given on p. 128 f., and rules for the cases used after comparatives and superlatives on pp. 136 & 143. With

reference, however, to this latter subject, it may be as well to recapitulate the rules.

*Comparative.* After an adjective in the comparative can be used :—

I. The word **kuin**, followed by the substantive in the proper case. **Oletkos sinä suurempi kuin meidän isämme Abraham ?**  
*art thou greater than our father Abraham ?*

II. Or else the word **kuin** is omitted and the substantive is put in the partitive. The sentence quoted above from the Bible might have been equally well written—**Oletkos sinä suurempi meidän isäämme Abrahamia ?**

III. Such expressions as 'it is better to,' and the like, are rendered by **parempi on** (*or olisi*), with the first infinitive. **Parempi on nöyränä olla, it is better to be humble.**

The *superlative* can be used either absolutely, or with some word depending on it in such phrases as '*the greatest of kings.*' Such a word is put either in the partitive or in the elative, with very little difference in the meaning. The elative, however, implies reference to a more definite class than the partitive. **Suurin kuninkaita is greatest of kings ;** but **suurin kuninkaista, the greatest of the kings.**

Not only are adjectives and substantives declined in exactly the same manner, but the distinction between them is very slight. The same form is sometimes used both as a noun and an adjective. e. g. **lysti, ikävä,** or adjectives are used in cases which seem to imply that they have a substantival meaning ; **Olla lujassa, to be firm ; olla kylmillä, to be cold.** Some substantives can be compared, as if they were adjectives. **Rannempi, nearer shore, mielellämmiin, more agreeably ;** so too **syrjempi (syrjä), talvempana, keväämpänä,** popular expressions for *later in winter or spring.* **Minä jätän illemmäksi, I leave it till later in the evening.**

## PRONOUNS.

*Personal Pronouns.*

The personal pronouns are always employed when there is any emphasis on them in English ; otherwise, they are mostly omitted, the termination of the verb indicating the person with sufficient clearness. Thus one says, *Minä olen sen tehnyt, et sinä, I did it, not you* ; but *Tahtoisin lähteä huomenna, jos ette pane vastaan, I should like to leave to-morrow if you have no objection.*

If the subject of *both* a principal and subordinate sentence is a pronoun of the first or second person, it is always omitted in the subordinate sentence. *Ottakaa mitä tahdotte, take what you like. Hän sanoi ettei tunne tätä miestä, he said he did not know the man.*

*Sinä* and *Te* are used with much the same distinction as *Du* and *Sie* in German, that is to say, the plural is used out of politeness when speaking with anyone but inferiors or intimate friends.

*Possessive Pronouns.*

There are no pronominal adjectives in Finnish corresponding to *my, thy*, etc. Their place is supplied (a) by the genitive of the personal pronoun, (b) more frequently by the pronominal affixes.

When the possessive pronoun is emphatic, both the genitive and the affix are used, and in the Bible this construction is frequent, even when there is no particular emphasis. As a rule, however, the affix alone is sufficient in the 1st and 2nd persons.

The affix of the 3rd person, however, is used alone only when it refers to the subject of the principal verb ; for instance, *Hän ei nähnyt vaimoansa, he has not seen his wife* ; but *Ettekö*

nähneet hänen vaimoansa? *have you not seen his wife?* Similarly, *He has not seen his* (another person's) *wife* must be rendered, *Hän ei nähnyt hänen vaimoansa.*

Such a sentence as *that is mine* is rendered by *Se on minun.* *Ei minun oppini ole minun, my doctrine is not mine.*

*It is I* is rendered by *minä olen.*

The affixes *ni, si, nsa,* etc. have a simple possessive sense when added to nouns, but they are added to a variety of other words under circumstances which render it impossible to translate them by the possessive pronoun in English. It would appear that they simply denote that the pronoun which they represent is to be taken in connection with the word to which they are added. When the two ideas of *House* and *I* are taken together this naturally means 'my house,' but other combinations have to be rendered in a different manner.

I. In old Finnish, particularly in the Bible, they are added to the cases of the personal pronouns for emphasis. *Tutkikaat raamatuita, sillä niissä te luulette teillenne ijankaikkisen elämän olevan, search the Scriptures for in them ye think ye have eternal life* (S. John v. 39). *Puhukaan itse hänestänsä, let him speak for himself* (S. John ix. 21). *Että te rakastaisitte teitäne keskenänne, that ye might love one another* (S. John xiii. 34). This use is found chiefly in the western dialect of Finnish.

II. They are similarly added to various adjectives. *En minä ole yksinäni, I am not alone.* Cf. the use of *hyvänsä* with pronouns. Similarly in such phrases as *rakastakaa toinen toistanne,* etc. (*vide p. 171*). *Olkoon sinänsä, let it be; olla semmoisenansa, to be like it or him; jättää työ siksensä, to leave one's work as it is.* *Hän on suorastansa hullu, he is a perfect fool.* Cf. *mieleiseni, agreeable to me.*

III. They are very commonly added to postpositions (*vide* p. 203 ff.), or to adverbs (which however are mostly cases of nouns or adjectives). *Ainoastansa, kokonansa; yhtenään, yleensä.*

IV. They are also added to infinitives and participles in many constructions (*vide* pp. 184–200).

#### *Demonstrative Pronouns.*

The demonstrative pronouns are as follows:—

*Tämä, this,* is used of both persons and things. *Nämä talot ovat minun, these houses are mine. Tällä miehellä ei ole rahaa, this man has no money. Tuo, that,* is also used of both persons and things. *Tuo tyttö on kaunis, that girl is good-looking. Tuo ei ole oikein, that is not correct.*

*Se* is used of the third person if anything but a human being is spoken of. *Missä on koira? Se ei ole huoneessa, where is the dog? He's not in the room. Ne kalat ovat pienet, these fish are small. Mitä pidätte siitä, what do you think of it?* In popular language and in the Kalevala it is also used as the equivalent of *hän*. *Se puhuu totta, he speaks the truth. Se mies joka paikkansa pitää (proverb), he is a man who keeps his place.* It is also used adjectively to emphasize a word, and often corresponds to our article. *Se koira vinkasi johon kalikka kävi, the dog who is hit howls (proverb).*

#### *Reflexive Pronouns.*

The reflexive pronoun in Finnish is supplied by the oblique cases of *Itse, self,* always with the addition of the proper possessive affix. The genitive, however, is rarely used, and only with prepositions. *Ostin itselleni hatun, I bought myself a hat. Itsestänsä paha pappi saarnaa (proverb), a bad priest preaches about himself. Tunne itsesi, know thyself. Auta itseäsi ja jumala sinua auttaa, help yourself and God will help you. Vide below (p. 170) for other uses of this word *itse*.*

The genitive of the reflexive pronoun is supplied by the adjective *oma*, *own*, corresponding to the Russian *свой*. The noun qualified by this adjective takes the proper pronominal affix. *Minä otin oman osani, ja hän ei sinun osaasi ottanut vaan oman osansa, I took my share, and he did not take your share, but his own share.* *Oma* has not always the reflexive meaning, but is used simply for emphasis as 'my own,' etc. in English. *Tämä on minun oma taloni, this is my own cottage.* *Omat on virret oppimani, omat saamani sanaiset.* It is also used without reference to a definite subject to mean 'one's own.'

**Omat maat makuisimmat**

**Omat metsät mielisimmat.**

*One's own lands are more pleasant and one's own forests sweeter (than those of others).*

#### *Interrogative Pronouns.*

(1) **Kuka** is a substantive. The nominative singular and plural means *who?* and is only used of persons. The remaining cases *kussa, kusta, kuhun or kunne, kuin, kun,* etc., are mostly used as particles. *Kuka luulisi häntä niin viekkaaksi? Who would have thought him so clever? Kutka tuolta tulevat? Who come from there?*

(2) **Ken** is identical in meaning with *kuka*, being also a substantive and only used of persons. The nominative is rarely used, but the oblique cases supply those of *kuka*. *Kenen kirja tämä on? Whose book is this? Kenellähän olisi rahaa? Who is likely to have any money?*

(3) **Mikä** has two uses: (1) when applied to persons it is always used adjectively. *Mikä mies tuo on? what man is that? Mi sinä olet miehiäsi? (Kal. ii. 134.) what manner of man art thou?* (2) When applied to things it can be used either adjectively or substantively. It will be noticed that this

is exactly similar to the use of *what* in English. **Mikä** on nimesi? *what is your name?* **Mitä** maksoitte? *what did you pay?* **Millä** kadulla asutte? *what street do you live in?*

(4) **Kumpi** is either a substantive or an adjective, and means *which of two*. **Kumpi** teistä (or teitä) tulee? *Which of you is coming?* **Kumpaa** viiniä paremmin rakastatte, punaistako vain valkoista? *Which wine do you prefer, red or white?* **Hän** saapui Turkuun, jossa kaupungissa viipyi kaksi viikkoa, *he arrived at Åbo, in which town he remained two weeks.*

#### *Relative Pronouns.*

**Joka**, *who* or *which*, is a substantive, and sometimes an adjective. **Joka** myllyyn menee se tomuun tulee, *he who goes to the mill gets dusty* (proverb). **Poika**, jolle annoitte kirjan, on veljeni, *the boy to whom you gave the book is my brother.*

**Jompi**, *which of two*, is not frequently used: **Ota** näistä kirjoista jomman tahdot, *take which of these books you like.* **Pata** kattilata soimaa: musta kylki kummallakin, *the pot abuses the kettle; but both are black.* **Kuka**, **kumpi**, and **mikä**, are also used as relatives. **En** tiedä kuka se on, *I do not know what is.* **Jos** tietäisin mitä tahdotte, niin antaisin, *if I knew what you wanted I would give it you.* N.B. The word **kuin**, meaning *as*, is sometimes used as a relative pronoun.

#### *Indefinite Pronouns.*

I. One kind of indefinite pronoun is formed by the union of the relative and interrogative in their shortened form. **Joku**, *some one, some one or other*; **jompikumpi**, *one or other of two*. **Joku** kolkuttaa, *some one is knocking*. **Tuli** joitakuita miehiä, *some men came*. **Sano** jommalle kummalle, *tell one or other of them*.

II. The relative and interrogative pronouns when combined with the suffix **kin**—**jokin**, **kukin**, **mikin**, **kumpikin** or **kum-**

**painenkin**—are used as indefinite pronouns in affirmative sentences. The same pronouns combined with **kaan**—**kukaan**, **kenkään**, **mikään**, **kumpikaan**—are used only in negative phrases or dubitative questions, and then mean, *no one, none, nothing*, and *neither*. **Menköön** jokin hänen jälkeen, *let some one go after him*. **Ei** kukaan tiedä mihin hän meni, *no one knows where he went*. **Oletteko** kuulleet jotakin uutta? *have you heard something new?* **En** mitäkään, *nothing*. **Ei** johtunut **kenenkään** mieleen, *no one remembered (it came into nobody's mind)*. **Kelpaako** näistä kumpikaan? *will either of these do?*

Under many circumstances the interrogative and relative pronouns are used as indefinite.

(1) In sentences meaning 'some do one thing, some another.' Cf. the use of **кто** in Russian. **Mikä** itkee, **mikä** nauraa, *one weeps and another laughs*. **Kuka** uskoo, **kuka** ei, *some believe, and some don't*. **Ketä** nälättää, **ketä** janottaa, *one is hungry, and another thirsty*.

(2) When two interrogatives or relatives are combined together and one takes the suffix **kin** in such expressions as **vieraita tuli mikä mistäkin**, *strangers come some from one side some from another* (Lat. *alii aliunde*). **Haastelivat** minkän mitäkin, *they talked of different subjects*. **Tekivät** tuttavuutta **kuka kunkin kanssa**, *they made acquaintances one with another*.

(3) Interrogatives and relatives are turned into indefinite pronouns by the addition of the words **hyvänsä**, **tahtonsa**, **tahansa**, **ikänänsä**, **ikinä**, corresponding to the Latin *cumque, libet, vis*, and such English expressions as *who you like, who you will, or ever*. **Sen** taitaa **kuka hyvänsä** tehdä, *anyone can do that*; **missä ikänänsä** olette, *wherever you are*; **tulkoon** **kuka tahtonsa** or **tahansa**, *whoever comes*; **kuka** **ikinä** **sen löytää**, *whoever finds it*.



(4) The use of the simple interrogative for the indefinite pronoun is peculiarly frequent in phrases beginning with **vaikka**. **Tulkoon vaikka kuka, come who may. Maksoi vaikka mitä, whatever it cost. Oli hän vaikka kuka, whoever he may be. Cf. vaikka koska, whenever; vaikka missä, wherever.**

*Various Pronominal Adjectives.*

I. **Eräs, muutama** and **muudan** or **muuan**, all mean *some, a certain*. **Eräänä aamuna, one morning. Muutamia miehiä astui huoneeseen, several men came into the room. Oli kerran muudan ukko, there was once an old man.**

II. **Itse**. This word, which means *self*, is used as a reflexive pronoun, as described above, p. 166. It is also used simply for emphasis. **Minä itse, I myself; hän on itse hyvyys, he is goodness itself.** When **itse** is used with a substantive it can either precede, in which case it is not declined and takes no pronominal suffix, or else follow, in which case it is put in the same case as the substantive and has a suffix. **Itse asiassa se ei mitään tee, as a matter of fact that makes no difference. Kuulin kerran ukon itsensä puhuvan, I once heard the old man himself say.**

When **itse** is used with postpositions it often remains unchanged while the postposition takes the pronominal suffix. **Itse puolestani olen tyytyväinen, for my part I am content. Hän on itse kauttansa rikastunut, he has grown rich by his own exertions (through himself). En siitä huolisi itse tähteni, I should not trouble about it on my own account.**

III. **Kaikki, all, every**, is the Latin *omnis*. **Koko, all or the whole, is totus**. This latter word is properly a substantive meaning collection, and it is not declined when used as an adjective. **Kaikki** is declined, but its accusative singular is

either **kaikki** or **kaiken**. The nominative and accusative plural are also generally **kaikki**, but **kaiket** is used in the sense of **koko**. N.B. Hän on minulle **kaikki kaikessa**, *he is all in all to me*.

IV. **Moni** is generally used in the singular, **moni mies**, *many a man*. When it is used as the subject of a sentence, the partitive **monta** is generally employed. **Monta miestä, monta mieltä**, *many men, many opinions* (proverb).

The plural **monet** has generally the sense of various. **Monet venäjän kansat elävät kalastuksella**, *many races in Russia live by fishing*.

V. The word **toinen**, *another* or *second*, is used with the pronominal suffixes as a reciprocal pronoun. In this case either the oblique case may be used alone with the suffix, or the nominative, without the suffix be added. **He rakastavat toisiansa**, *they love one another*, or **He rakastavat toinen toisiansa**.

**Muu** means *other* or *another*, whereas **toinen** usually means *the other*, or at any rate refers to a definite person. Thus **Näistä miehestä toinen on venäläinen, toinen saksalainen**, *one of these men is a Russian, the other a German*. **Se ei ole kukaan muu kuin kuningas itse**, *this is no other than the king himself*. **Ovatko toiset tulleet?** *are the others come?* **Onko ketään muita tullut?** *Has anyone else come?*

The adverbial forms **muualla, muualta, muualle** seem derived from a stem **muuka**, which is not found in the nominative. **Miehet ovat muualta tulleet**, *the men have come from another country*.<sup>1</sup>

VI. The indeclinable adjective **joka** has much the same meaning as **jokainen**, namely *each* or *every*. **Joka vuosi**, *every*

<sup>1</sup> Cf. **kaikkialla, toisialla, kuusialla**. Some consider these forms as compounds of the pronominal stem with the word **ala**, so that **muualla** stands for **muu + ala + lla**.

*year. Se nähdään joka aika, that is always seen. Annoin rahaa joka miehelle, I gave every man some money. Joka toinen, kolmas, neljäs, etc., every second, third, fourth, etc. Joka toisena päivänä, every other day.*

### NUMBERS.

The use of the numbers presents some peculiarities.

A. **Yksi**, *one*, is an adjective which agrees with the substantive it qualifies. *Hän aina puhuu yhtä asiaa, he always talks on one subject. Olla yhdessä neuvossa, to be concerned in a plan.*

B. The other numbers require that the word they qualify should be in the partitive singular, *if the number is in the nominative*. Under these circumstances the verb is the singular. *Kolme poikaa on talossa, three boys are in the house. Viisi tuhatta miestä, 5000 men. Seitsemän kalaa, seven fishes.*

But with words that have no singular, both the numeral and substantive are put in the nominative. *Yhdet, kahdet häät, one, two marriages. Viidet sakset, five pairs of scissors. Kahdeksat sukat, eight pairs of stockings.*

C. If the numeral is in an oblique case, then the substantive is put in the same case also, *but in the singular*. *Viidelle pojalle, to five boys. Kolmelle kymmenelle miehelle, to thirty-six men.*

But in the Kalevala, one finds such expressions as *löyti kuusia jyviä, Seitsemiä siemeniä.*

D. If the number and substantive have a pronoun or adjective agreeing with them, this latter is put in the plural and in the same case as the number. But the substantive obeys the preceding rules. If the attribute is in the nominative plural,

the verb is also in the plural. **Nämät viisi poikaa tulivat kotia, these five boys come home. Anna leipää näille viidelle pojalle, give some bread to these five boys.**

N.B. In all the numbers except **yksi** the accusative is the same as the nominative. **Näin kaksi miestä, I saw two men. Ampui viisi lintuja; he shot five birds; but Näin yhden miehen, I saw one man.**

### *Expression of a date.*

I. To express the year the word **vuosi** is employed, and a cardinal number after it. If **vuosi** is used in the local or in the essive case this number is not inflected. **Vuonna tuhatta (or tuhat) kahdeksan sataa kahdeksankymmentä yhdeksän, in the year 1889.**

But if the genitive of **vuosi** is used, then the number is also put in the genitive. **Vuoden tuhatta kahdeksan sataa kahdeksankymmentä viiden sato, the harvest of 1885.**

II. The day of the month is expressed in two ways.

(1) First comes the name of the month in the genitive, then an ordinal number in the essive, and the word **päivänä**. **Maaliskuun kolmantena päivänä, March 3.**

(2) Or the numeral and **päivänä** come first, and are followed by the name of the month in the partitive. **Kolmantena päivänä Maaliskuuta.**

III. The hour expressed by the word **kello**, which remains under all circumstances invariable, followed by a cardinal numeral which can be inflected. **Kello on kuusi, it is six o'clock. Nouseen kello neljältä, I get up at five o'clock.**

The half hours are expressed in much the same way as in German or Russian. **Half past four, puoli viisi; half past five, puoli kuusi; half past six, puoli seitsemän, etc. A quarter past**

*five* is expressed by *se on neljänneksen yli viisi* (*five plus a quarter*), and *a quarter to six* by *se on neljännestä vaille kuusi* (*six minus a quarter*).

The names of the days of the week and months are as follows :—

<i>Sunday</i>	<b>Sunnuntai.</b>
<i>Monday</i>	<b>Maanantai.</b>
<i>Tuesday</i>	<b>Tiistai.</b>
<i>Wednesday</i>	<b>Keskiviikko.</b>
<i>Thursday</i>	<b>Torstai.</b>
<i>Friday</i>	<b>Perjantai.</b>
<i>Saturday</i>	<b>Lauantai.</b>

<i>January</i>	<b>Tammikuu.</b>
<i>February</i>	<b>Helmikuu.</b>
<i>March</i>	<b>Maaliskuu.</b>
<i>April</i>	<b>Huhtikuu.</b>
<i>May</i>	<b>Toukokuu.</b>
<i>June</i>	<b>Kesäkuu.</b>
<i>July</i>	<b>Heinäkuu.</b>
<i>August</i>	<b>Elokuu.</b>
<i>September</i>	<b>Syyskuu.</b>
<i>October</i>	<b>Lokakuu.</b>
<i>November</i>	<b>Marraskuu.</b>
<i>December</i>	<b>Joulukuu.</b>

### THE VERB.

The moods and tenses of the Finite verb in Finnish are very simple.

The present and imperfect with the compound tenses called perfect and pluperfect form the entire indicative mood.

## I. The present indicates—

(1) An habitual action, or an action which is going on at the present time. *Joka päivä hän lukee sanomalehden alusta loppuun saakka, every day he reads the newspaper through from one end to the other. Mihin menette? Menemme metsään, where are you going? we are going to the wood.* When it is desired to emphasise the fact that some one is engaged in an action at the present time, such phrases as *he ovat kalastamassa, they are fishing,* may be used (v. p. 191).

(2) A future action, as we say 'he comes to-morrow.' Some distinction is made between these two uses by the fact that while a verb representing an action as going on always takes an object in the partitive, a verb which represents an action as to be completed in the future takes an object in the genitive. *Kirjoitan kirjettä, I am writing a letter; huomenna kirjoitan kirjeen, I shall write a letter to-morrow. Kun saan tietää missä asuu, niin menen hänen luo, when I know where he lives I shall go and see him.*

(3) In a few expressions the present indicative is used in a concessive sense. *Maksaa mitä maksaa, cost what it may. Sano mitä sanot, say what you will.*

## II. The imperfect is used in two senses:—

(1) It denotes an action in past time, either habitual or isolated, either continuous or momentary; it thus corresponds to several past tenses in other languages. *Seuraavana päivänä tuli nuori rouva aamiaispöytään, kun muut olivat lopettaneet, next day the young lady came down to breakfast when the rest had finished. Tapasitko sisartani? did you meet my sister? En tavannut, I did not meet her. Joka päivä lähti hän kävelemään pääkadulle, every day he took a walk in the principal street. Lohi loimahti merehen, the salmon jumped*

*into the sea. Itki yötä kaksi kolme, he wept two or three nights.*

(2) It is also used like the present in a concessive sense, but much more frequently than that tense. *Kävi miten kävi, asiaan on ryhtyttävä, come what may, the business must be begun. Oli kumpi hyvänsä, whichever of the two it is.* Cf. such expressions as *kuka niitä kaikkia muisti? Lempo niitä ymmärsi.*

It is noticeable that in the narrative portions of the Kalevala and other poems the present and imperfect are used almost indifferently (*v. extracts at end of book*). Perhaps the sound of the terminations *pi* and *vi*, which, like the imperfect, end in *i*, made the confusion easier.

III. The perfect corresponds pretty nearly to the tense formed with the auxiliary *have* in English. *Olemme maanneet vähän aikaa niin lähdemme järvelle koko yöksi, we have slept a little and are going out on the lake for the whole night. Oletteko ennen kuulleet sitä laulua? have you heard that song before? En ole nähnyt häntä moneen aikaan, I have not seen him for a long time.*

IV. The pluperfect expresses an action finished in past time, and may be rendered by *had* in English. *Kun hän sen sanonut oli, meni hän taas ulos, when he had said this he went out again. Oliko hän ehkä saanut tiedon asiasta? had he by any chance heard of the matter?*

It will be observed that there is no real future tense in Finnish. Its want is supplied in several ways.

A. By the present tense as described above.

B. By a periphrastic conjugation consisting of the present participle and the present or imperfect of *olla*. This corresponds to the Russian future with *буду*, and denotes a future action the time of which is not specified. *Ennenkuin päivät tulevat*

koikas olet sanova . . . , *before the days come in which thou shalt say . . .* (Eccl. xii. 1). Hän on vapahtava kansansa heidän synnelstänsä, *He shall save His people from their sins.*

C. By the concessive. This tense is frequently used to imply something probable or doubtful in the future. *Ostanevat kaupungista kirjat ja tuonevat ne jo huomenna kotia, they will probably buy new books and bring them home to-morrow.* Tappaneeko hän itsensä? (S. John viii. 22) *will he kill himself?*

D. By the conditional, especially in conditional sentences. *Tulisin huomenna, jos ehtisin, I shall come to-morrow, if I have time.* Isäntä ei palkitsisi sinua ennenkuin olisit työsi lopettanut, *your master will not pay you before you finish your work.*

E. Various periphrases are used, particularly when there is any idea of necessity or obligation in the future. The following examples taken from the translation of the Bible will show this. *Minä saan nähdä hänen, mutta en nyt, I shall see him, but not now* (Num. xxiv. 17, but the passage continues *minä katselen häntä waan en lästä*). *Teidän pitää minua etsimän, ye shall seek me* (S. John vii. 34). *Sillä ei sitä pidä unhotettaman heidän siemenensä suussa, for it shall not be forgotten out of the mouths of their seed* (Deut. xxxi. 21). *Autuaat ovat siviät sillä he saavat maan periä, blessed are the meek for they shall inherit the earth* (S. Matt. v. 5).

#### *The Concessive.*

This mood represents an action as possible, and is particularly used in questions, or in sentences introduced by such particles as *ehkä*, which imply a doubt or question.

It has two tenses.

I. The present, implying a potential action in the present or



future. **Lieneekö totta mitä sanotaan?** *is it likely that what people say is true?* **Hän sen parhaiten tietänee,** *he probably knows best.* **Jos et tuostana totelle,** *if thou wiltst not obey that.* **Osannet palkan ottaa, osaa työkin tehdä,** *wouldst thou know how to receive the reward, learn how to do the work.* **Sureneeko Jumala härkiä?** *doth God care for oxen?* **Ei suattane sinua Saaren suurehen sukuhun,** *they are not likely to tolerate your alliance with the great family of the island* (Kal. xi. 71).

II. The past, implying a potential action in past time. **Hän lienee luullut minua toiseksi,** *he probably thought I was some one else.* **Ei liene sinua luotu Ison tammen taittajaksi** (Kal. ii. 145), *thou art probably not created to break the mighty oak.* **Lieneekö hän arvanuut ketä puhutteli?** *did he know with whom he spoke?*

#### *The Conditional.*

The conditional mood has two tenses, the present and past, which denote an action dependent on certain conditions in present or past time.

It is used:—

(1) In conditional, comparative, and concessive sentences, both in the protasis and apodosis. When used in the sentence introduced by **JOS**, or some similar particle, the present implies that the condition is not yet realised, and the past that it has not been. But this distinction is not always observed, the present being used of a condition not realized in the past. **Jos menisitte tässä myrskyssä järvelle niin hukkuisitte,** *if you were to go on the lake in this storm you would be drowned.* **Parempi olisi ollut Ilman impenä eleä,** *it would have been better to live as the virgin of the air* (Kal. i. 161). **Jos varani myöntäisivät niin matkustaisin ulkomaille,** *if my means allowed me I should go abroad.* **Kukapa . . . käkiä**

kukutteleisi, Lintusia laulattaisi, Jos minä menisin muunne, Saisin marja muille malle. Jos tämä kana katoisi, Tämä hanhi hairrahtaisi, etc. (Kal. x. 441 ff.).

The word *jos* is sometimes omitted and replaced by the interrogative suffix *-ko* after the verb. Kal. xi. 95:—*Nauraisitko Saaren naiset, Pitäisit pyhäiset piiat, Niin siitä tora tulisi, Sota suuri lankeaisi, were you to seduce the maidens of the island a quarrel would come of it and a great war fall on us.*

(2) In final sentences to express the object of an action. *Ilmoittakaat minulle että minäkin tulisin ja kummartaisin häntä* (S. Matt. ii. 8), *bring me word that I may come and worship him also. Kirjoitan hänelle että hän toimittaisi sen asian, I am writing to him that he may undertake the affair. Olkaa hiljaa, lapset, että saisin rauhassa työskennellä, be quiet, children, that I may work in peace. Ava suusi suuremmaksi . . . pääsisin mahasta maalle* (Kal. xvii. 583), *open thy mouth . . . that I may come forth from thy stomach.*

(3) In temporal and relative sentences when the temporal particle or relative involves some idea of purpose, capacity, etc. *En tahtonut ruveta kirjoittamaan ennenkuin saisin varman tiedon asiasta, I did not wish to write before I received certain news of the affair. Päätin lakkauttaa kauppaliikkeeni kunnes ajat paranisivat, I determined to close my business till the times should be better. Sen mä mieheksi sanoisin, Urohoksi arveleisin, Joka jouseni vetäisi, Kiveräni kiinnittäisi.* (Kal. xxvi. 357). N.B. The conditional is used only if the principal verb is in a past tense or conditional.

(4) In Oratio Obliqua.

a. After verbs of wishing, asking, commanding, etc. *Käske että palvelija valjastaisi hevosen, tell the servant to get the horse harnessed. Tahdotko että se heti tehtäisiin? do you wish it to be done at once?*

b. To represent the imperative in the *Oratio recta*. *Isäntä sanoi että rengit menisivät pellolle, the master told the servants to go to the fields. Hän viittasi että he vaikenisivat, he motioned to them to be silent.*

(5) As a polite form of statement, request, or question, from which, as mentioned above, it often comes to be used as a future. *Minä luulisin että hän ostaisi talonne, I should think he would buy your house. Voisitteko kertoa minulle? can you tell me? Tahtoisin puhua kanssanne, I should like to talk to you. Näyttäisitte minulle, please show me. Enkö saisi . . .? can I have . . .? Menisitte noutamaan yhdet hyrryvaunut, please go and call a cab.*

(6) To express a wish with such particles as *jos, jospa, kunhan*, etc. *Jospa hän tulisi! if he would only come! Jospa olisin tietänyt! had I only known! Kunhan tuttuni tulisi! if my friend would but come!*

#### *Imperative and Optative.*

Though these moods are given as two in the *Accidence* on account of the slight difference in their form, they may be treated as one syntactically, as they supply one another's deficiencies, the imperative being only used in the 2nd sing. and 1st and 2nd persons plur., and the optative only in the 2nd sing. and the 3rd person singular and plural. In poetry a 2nd pers. plur. optative ending in *otte* is occasionally found. There is no difference between the meaning of the two in 2nd person singular.

The imperative expresses:—

I. A command or request. *Lähe nyt kanssa laulamahan, come to sing with me (Kal. i. 14). Toki tullos toinen kerta, come again (Kal. v. 137). Käy pian välehen jou'u, go quickly and finish the business (Kal. l. 211). Ellös menkö*

poikaseni Parempihin itseäsi, *aspire not, my son, to those that are better than thyself* (Kal. xi. 69).

II. A condition. Sano mitä sanot, en siitä kuitenkaan välitä, *you may say what you like, but I dont care.* Teen minä sen vaikka hän kieltäköönkin, *I shall do it, even though he forbid it.*

### *The Passive.*

The passive, as has already been mentioned in the Accidence, is impersonal. Käytetään means *there is a using, or one uses, people use.* The clearest proof of the real character of the form is to be found in the fact that the verb substantive olla, *to be,* has a so-called passive.

Examples:—Niin kohta kun ollaan tultu, *as soon as people come.* Ennen oltiin terveempiä, *people were healthier formerly.* Siihen oltaneen tyytyväisiä, *this will probably prove satisfactory (people will be satisfied with this).* Järvellä oltaessa tuuli kovasti, *while they were on the lake, the wind blew violently.*

(1) The passive of ordinary verbs is used absolutely; that is to say, no noun is connected with it as subject or object. Koulussa kirjoitetaan ja luetaan, *they read and write in the school.* Helsingissä huvitellaan paljo talven aikoina, *there is much amusement in Helsingfors in winter time.* Suomen järvissä ja joissa kalastetaan, *people fish (or there is fishing) in the lakes and rivers of Finland.*

(2) As the above examples show, the passive represents the action of a verb without designating the agent. It is not unnatural that such forms should be used in an imperative or optative sense, for the second singular of the imperative is simply the root of the verb. It is true that the imperative is the closed root, due to the loss of *k*, but like the passive it has no sign of person.

This use of the passive for the imperative is particularly common in dialects, though it is also found in the literary language. Its usual meaning is 'Let us.' **Mennään sisään,** *let us go in.* **Luetaan,** *let us read, or it's time to read.* **Lähdetään kotia,** *we ought to go home.* **Mennäänkö jalan vain ajetaanko hevosella?** *Shall we go on foot, or take a carriage?*

(3) This use of the passive for the imperative is important as explaining the common use of the form with a nominative case. Such a phrase as *mies tunnetaan* can be correctly translated as *the man is known*; but there is no doubt that the nominative is really the object of an impersonal verb, which naturally remains invariable, whatever the noun is. Now the object of the imperative is also put in the nominative and not in the accusative, though both in the case of the imperative and the passive it may be put in the partitive, if partial. It would seem that in these forms of the verbs, where the agent is not denoted by any suffix, it was felt that the sense was sufficiently clear without adding any termination to the noun to mark its exact relation to the verb.

The object of the passive, as above stated, can be either in the nominative, if total, or in the partitive, if partial.

a. Nominative. **Koira ajetaan huoneesta ulos,** *the dog is sent out of the room.* **Palvelija lähetetään viemään kirjettä postiin,** *the servant is sent to take a letter to the post.* **Hevoset valjastetaan,** *the horses are being harnessed.* **Ruis kylvetään syksyllä,** *rye is sown in the autumn.* **Keskellä yötä sammuteetaan tulet,** *the lights are put out at midnight.* **Tässä sodassa tapettiin viisikymmentä tuhatta miestä,** *fifty thousand men were killed in this war.*

b. Partitive. **Miksi sanotaan sitä Englannin kielellä?** *What is that called in English?* **Jos ei aleta varhain, niin ei työtä saada aikanaan valmiiksi,** *the work wont be ready*

*in time if not begun early. Poikaa ei vielä pantu kouluun, the boy was no longer sent to school. Ei vielä ollut uutta kirkkoa rakennettu, the new church had not yet been built. Ei kynttilätä sytytetä ja panna wakan ala, neither do men light a candle and put it under a bushel, S. Matt. v. 15.*

When the personal pronouns are used with the verb, it is commoner, particularly in speaking, to put them in the accusative ending in *t*, e. g. *minut, sinut, hänet* *nähdään*, is more usual than *minä, sinä, hän* *nähdään*. But the form with the nominative is not only grammatically correct, but found in writing, especially in the Bible, e. g. Rom. viii. 36, *Sinun tähtes me kuoletetaan yli päivää: me pidetään niinkuin teurastettavat lampaat, for thy sake we are killed all the day long: we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter.* Similarly 2 Cor. xi. 36, *Kuka pahoitetaan ja en minä pala? Who is offended and I burn not. Sillä he ravitaan, for they shall be filled, S. Matt. v. 6. Että te heiltä nähtäisiin, that ye may be seen of them, S. Matt. vi. 1<sup>1</sup>.*

The conjugation of a passive form contains not only the strictly impersonal forms, like *luetaan, people read, luettiin, people did read*, but also compound tenses formed with the past passive participle which stand grammatically upon a different footing. For the participle in question is a simple adjective (or substantive), and such phrases as *kirja on luettu, kirjat ovat luetut* are exactly analogous to *kirja on hyvä* and *kirjat ovat hyvät*. In some cases, however, double constructions are possible: one can say either *kirjat eivät ole löydetyt, the books have not been found*, which is a simple adjectival construction; or *kirjoja ei ole löydetty*, in which the construction with the participle is assimilated to that with the other forms of the verb.

<sup>1</sup> It is noticeable that peasants frequently use the passive with the pronoun of the first person plural, as if it were a personal form. *Jokohan mekin tuo lehmä myötäisiin? Shall we not sell this cow too?*

If a participle of *olla* is employed in a compound tense in this construction it must be the passive participle. *Kirjaa ei oltu löydetty, the book was not found.*

#### INFINITIVES.

The five infinitives of the Finnish verb play a great part in the syntax, and are often used to express the subordinate sentences (temporal, final, etc.) of other languages. The simplest way to understand their many uses is to recollect that they are equivalent to an English verbal ending in *ing*, such as *cutting*. Now a word like this is a noun, but it can also have an object, e. g. *cutting the wood*, and it can be also combined with a substantive or pronoun indicating the agent, e. g. *my cutting the wood* or *the man's cutting the wood*. Such expressions as *my cutting the wood is unavoidable, during my cutting the wood*, or *without my cutting the wood* are intelligible in English, though not idiomatic; but they are the literal translation of the Finnish idiom. In other words, the infinitive is a noun capable of declension in certain cases and of being combined with a genitive or personal affix to mark the agent. As it is also a verbal noun, it is likewise capable of being combined with a second substantive to mark the object of the action. Thus *nähdessänsä minun päiväni* is literally '*in his seeing my day*,' that is *when he saw*. The use of the fourth infinitive is slightly different. In the phrase *Minun on tämä kirja lukeminen*, *I should read this book*, it will be observed that the object is in the nominative. This is because the literal meaning seems to be, *This book is a reading for me*, though it must be admitted that the negative form *Ei ole minun tätä kirjaa lukemista* does not lend itself to this explanation, and can only be explained by supposing it is due to analogy. The object of the other infinitives is mostly put in the partitive,

partly perhaps because, as the genitive and accusative are identical in form in the singular, the subject and object might be confused if the latter were in the accusative. The object is, however, often put in the nominative. The rule generally given is that this is only right if the infinitive depends on an imperative or a verb implying necessity, as *minun pitää ostaman hevonen, I must buy a horse*. But this rule is not always observed in the Kalevala, or even in modern books. E. g. Kal. xi. 127, *Onko saarella sioa minun leikki lyöäkseni?*

#### *Infinitive I.*

The first infinitive has two forms, one with the translative termination and always used with a pronominal suffix; the other with no case termination and used without a pronominal suffix.

A. The longer form with the suffix is used to express the purpose of the action of the main verb, and is rendered in English by *in order to* or by a simple infinitive. *Antakaa vettä juodakseni, give me water to drink*. This is of course literally *give me water for my drinking*, and is exactly analogous to the use of the same case of a noun in the sentence, *Juon vettä terveydekseni, I drink water for my health*. It is important to notice that the pronominal suffix always indicates the subject of the action denoted by the infinitive, and not the object, though in translation it is often necessary to invert the sentence. For instance in S. John vii. 19 and 20 the questions '*Why go ye about to kill me? Who goeth about to kill thee?*' are rendered *Miksi te etsitte minua tappaaksenne? Kuka sinua etsii tapaaksensa?* literally *Why seek ye me for your killing? Who seeks thee for his killing?* *Me pyysimme venettä soutaaksemme, we asked for a boat to row in*. *Menkäämme tuolle vuorelle katsellaksemme järveä, let us go up that hill to have a view of the lake*. *Tahdon lukea laskun nähdäkseni onko*



**kaikki oikein**, *I want to read the bill to see if everything is right.*  
**Oli paljon matkustellut ulkomailla täydentääkseen sivistystään**, *he had travelled much abroad to complete his education.*  
 The distinction between the uses of the longer and shorter forms of the infinitive is not always observed in dialects and poetry. Thus the longer form is used with impersonal verbs, e. g. **Sinun täytyy mennäksesi**, *you must go*, where **mennä** would now be used. So too **Älä pelkää ottaaksesi**, *fear not to take.*  
**Kal. i. 165**, **Wilu täällä on ollakseni**, **Waiva wärjätelläkseni**, **Aalloissa asuakseni**, **Weessä wierielläkseni**, *it is cold for me to be here, painful to stay, to dwell in the waves, to roll in the water.* Cf. **Kal. xliii. 401**, and **xvii. 507**.

B. The fact that the last syllable of the shorter form of the first infinitive is closed shows that it has undoubtedly lost a letter or syllable. It is probable therefore that the short form is not really the nominative from which the translative is derived, but a translative which has lost its termination. Cf. **luo**, **taa** for **luoksi**, **taaksi**. The employment of the form is also agreeable to its origin, for its manifold uses, as given in grammars, may be summed up in the formula that it defines the meaning of verbs, adjectives, and substantives; that is to say, it expresses that towards which an action tends, which is one of the uses of the translative (p. 159). Such phrases as **voin**, **tahdon**, **tiedän lukea**, *I can read, wish to read, or know how to read* might be expressed as *I have power, will, or knowledge for reading.*

In some cases the use of the translative and this infinitive are obviously analogous. **Ei sovi suuttua**, *it is not fitting to be angry.* **Hän sopii sotamieheksi**, *he is fit for a soldier.* **Ei minun kelpaa juoda vettä**, *it does not suit me to drink water*, can be also expressed in the form, **Vesi ei kelpaa minulle juotavaksi** (or **juomaksi**).

The short form of this infinitive never takes suffixes in

ordinary Finnish, though it does occasionally in the Kalevala ; e. g. the first lines *Mieleni minun tekevi, Aivoni ajattelevi, Lähteäni laulamahan, Saa'ani sanelemahan. Onko saarella sioa . . . Minun laulut laulellani, is these a place on the island for me to sing my song* (Kal. xxix. 137). Cf. *Onpa saarella sioa . . . Sinun laulut laulellasi* (*ib.* 147).

The subject of the infinitive, which in the longer form is denoted by a suffix, is in the case of the shorter form either not expressed at all in such a phrase as *Isä antoi kirjan pojalle lukea, the father gave the boy the book to read*; or it is put in the *genitive*. *Isä toi kirjan pojan lukea, the father bought the book for the boy to read, literally for the boy's reading.*

The short form of the infinitive is used:—

(1) As the subject of impersonal verbs like *täytyy, tulee, kelpaa*.

*Paha koira tarvitsee tappaa, one ought to kill a bad dog. Täytyy köyhän kärsiä, pitää kiittää päälliseksi, the poor must endure and give thanks into the bargain* (proverbs). *Sinun tulee puhua totta, you must speak the truth.*

In this use two constructions are possible. One can say either *talossa pitää olla isäntä, the master must be in the house, or Isännän pitää olla talossa*. In this latter case the fact of the obligation affecting the person is emphasized, while the sentence with the nominative means rather, *the master's being in the house is necessary*.

(2) As the complement of the verb *olla* combined with an adjective or substantive. *Se kirja on hyödyllinen pojan lukea, this book is useful for the boy to read. Ei ole aikaa lähteä, it is not time to go. Pyyntösi on mahdoton kenenkään täyttää, your prayer is impossible for anyone to fulfil. Tämä kuorma on raskas sinun kantaa, this burden is hard for you to bear. On vaikea sanoa, it is hard to say.*

(3) It is used to define the meaning of verbs. *Talon mies ei osaa lukea, the farm servant does not know how to write. Alkaa sataa, it begins to rain. Laiaka lapsi ei tahdo oppia, a lazy child does not want to learn. Hän ei ymmärrä puhua, he does not know how to speak. En voi tulla, I cannot come. Hän saa odottaa, he can wait. Aiotko viipyä täällä, do you mean to stay here. Sallitteko minun mennä? do you allow me to go? Klaus lähteä lupasi, Klaus promised to go (Kanteletar).*

(4) It is used much like the longer form to express the object of an action. *Tuo kala muidenkin katsella, bring the fish for others to see. Panen maata, I am going to bed. Onko teillä hevosta myödä? have you a horse to sell? Arvelevi miten olla kuin eleä, he considered what he should do, how he should live.*

There is another use of this infinitive, when it is employed with a verb of kindred meaning in an adverbial sense. This use is very frequent in the Kalevala and poetry and occasionally found in prose. It is to be noted, however, that the infinitive generally represents what would be the principal verb in ordinary language, while the verb in the indicative indicates the manner in which the action is performed. Thus such a phrase as *astua taputtelevi*, means *walking he stamped* or *he stamped as he walked*. *Härkä käyä källeröitti* (Kal. xx. 43), equivalent to *astui keveästi*; cf. *Astua lykyttelevi, Käyä kuleroittelevi* (Kal. ii. 165). *Waka vanha Wäinämöinen Ajoa karittelevi* (Kal. viii. 18). *Soutoa melastelevi* (Kal. v. 41). *Astua ajattelevi, Käyä kääpärittelevi. Polttaa tuprutteli havannaansa.*

The first infinitive is hardly ever used in the passive form, but the active form may be used with a passive verb or in sentences where our idiom would use the passive infinitive. *Rautatie aiotaan rakentaa, the railway is meant to be built* or

*there is an intention to build the railway. Linnottus voidaan ottaa, the fortress can be taken.*

The infinitive cannot be used with a negative on account of the peculiar character of the Finnish negative verb. For the various devices used to overcome this difficulty *vide* pages 193 and 219.

### *Infinitive II.*

This infinitive is only employed in two cases, the inessive and the instructive.

(1) The inessive expresses an action coincident in time with the action of the principal verb, and must be rendered in English by a temporal sentence, the subject of which appears in Finnish as a genitive, but where the subject of the principal and subordinate sentences are the same in English, the infinitive takes a pronominal suffix. *Palvelijan tullessa kotiin, isäntä läksi metsään, when the servant came home, the master went into the wood, or literally 'on the coming home of the servant.'* *Abraham teidän isänne iloitsi nähdessänsä minun päivääni* (S. John viii. 56), *your father Abraham rejoiced to see (when he saw) my day.* *Ollessani teidän kanssanne, when I was with you. Astuessansa ahoa, Saloviertä vierressänsä kuuli* (Kal. xlv. 77), *as he went through the desert place, as he walked near the wood he heard.*

This infinitive is frequently used in the passive. *Kaskea poltettaessa, while the forest was burning. Kotiin tullessa ei ollut ketäkään, on coming home, there was no one.* Kal. iii. 245, *Eikä lie sinua nähty. . . . Tätä maata saataessa, Ilmoa suettaessa, etc.*

The active infinitive is also used impersonally. *Aika menee arvellessa, päivä päätä käännellessä, time passes while one thinks, and the day while one turns one's head* (proverb).

As the Finnish negative, owing to its peculiar character, cannot be used with the infinitive, a negative temporal proposition is rendered by the abessive or infinitive III, and the inessive of infinitive II. *Lukematta istuessani, when I was not reading*; literally, *in my sitting without reading*.

(2) The instructive of infinitive II is used to express the manner in which an action is performed, and is generally rendered by a participle in English. If the subject of the infinitive is expressed (in which case it must be rendered otherwise than by a participle) it is put in the genitive. This form is not used in the passive.

*Astui huollen huokaellen, he walked sorrowing and groaning* (Kal. v. 13). *Muu seura vaikeni, jättäen heidät kahden kesken sanaotteluun, the rest of the company was silent, leaving them to argue it out between themselves. Toisinaan sydämellisesti syleillen erosivat, after again heartily embracing they parted. Hän ei ollut ollenkaan ruma nuorukainen, he was not at all a bad looking young man* (literally, *was not in his being*).

A few words, chiefly denoting perception, add suffixes to this infinitive. *Sanoin sen heidän kuultensa, I said it in their hearing. Hän teki sen rikoksen teidän tietenne, he committed this crime with your knowledge.*

### *Infinitive III.*

The substantival nature of the Finnish infinitives is most apparent in this form, for it is frequently used as a noun without any verbal signification, e. g. *kuolema, death*; *elämä, life*; *sanoma, speaking or report*. Such a sentence as *kuvat ovat maalarin tekemät*, which may be rendered either *the pictures are the work of the painter*, or, *are made by the painter*, shows the connection between the purely substantival and verbal uses of this infinitive.

Its other uses are very various.

I. It is used as a past passive participle. *Tämä kirja on isän antama, this book has been given by my father, or, is the giving of my father. Minä luen isän antamaa kirjaa, I read the book given by my father.* As there is no real distinction between the noun and the adjective, this use of a verbal substantive as a participle is not unnatural. *Kirjoittamassansa kirjeessä hän ei ollut puhunut mitään tästä, in the letter he wrote he did not say a word about it. Omat on virret oppimani, Omat saamani sanaiset.*

This infinitive is as a rule only used as a past participle when the agent is indicated, but in the Kalevala it is found used as simple past participle without a genitive or affix. *Kal. i. 51, Viel' on muitaki sanoja, Ongelmoita oppimia, Tieohesta tempomia, Kanervoista katkomia, Risukoista riipomia, Vesoista vetelemiä, Päästä heinän hieromia, Raitiolta ratkomia.*

II. Most of the other cases of this infinitive are found used in a verbal signification.

A. The case ending in *n* (which is considered by some grammarians as a genitive, and by others, with greater probability, as an instructive) is used with the impersonal verb *pitää*. *Ei sinun pidä tappaman, thou shalt do no murder. Hänen pitää oleman ankara, he should be firm.* This form is also used in the passive. *Lapset pitää otettaman mukaan, one should take one's children with one. Työt pitää saataman aikanansa valmiiksi, the work should be got ready in time.*

B. The inessive expresses the action in which anyone is engaged. *He ovat oleet jo kauan kalastamassa, they have long been fishing. Hän on lintuja ampumassa, he is out shooting. Rupean käymään usein lukemassa englantilaisia sanomalehtiä, I shall often read the English papers.*

C. The elative expresses an action from which anyone ceases, or which is forbidden. *He tulivat kotia kalastamasta, they came home from fishing. Milloin hyvänsä tuli huoneeseen tapasi hänen aina lukemasta, whenever one went into her room one always found her reading (v. p. 145). Hän kielsi lapsia riitelemästä, he forbade the children to quarrel. Jumala pelasti miehen hukkumasta, God preserved the man from drowning.*

D. The illative is used:—

(1) After verbs, adjectives, and participles, which imply either literally or figuratively motion to perform an action (v. the uses of the illative given above). *Mies meni järvelle kalastamaan, the man has gone to fish on the lake. Neuvon teitä kääntymään Herra V:n puoleen, I advise you to apply to Mr. V. Ruvennee tulemaan lunta, it will probably snow. Koko talo rupeaa palamaan, the whole house takes fire. Hän ei ole tottunut säästelemään, he was not accustomed to live economically. Minua käskettiin menemään pois, I was ordered to leave.*

(2) From such uses the illative passes naturally into an infinitive of purpose. *Tulin kysymään, I have come to ask. Lähettivät palvelijat häntä ottamaan kiini, they sent servants to take him. Meni puhdistamaan itseänsä, he went to purify himself. Menemme puutarhaan juomaan kahvia, let us go to take coffee in the garden.*

E. The adessive has two meanings, corresponding to the two uses of that case in nouns.

(1) With the verb olla it denotes an action which one is on the point of performing. The infinitive always takes a pronominal suffix in this use. *Olen juuri lähtemälläni, I am just going, literally, I am on my departing. Olin tekemälläni tuhmuuden, I was on the point of committing a folly.*

(2) It expresses the means by which an action is performed.

Ostamalla kaikkia saapi, *one gets everything by buying.* Hauskempaa on kalastaa onkimalla kuin tarpomalla, *it is more agreeable to catch fish by angling than by netting.* Pelasti henkensä uimalla, *he saved his life by swimming.* Viittomalla osoiti hän meille tien, *he showed us the way by waving his hand.*

F. The abessive expresses an action without which the action of the principal verb takes place. It is very largely used in Finnish to express what is represented by negative sentences in other languages, on account of the restrictions on the use of the negative words *en, et, ei,* etc. It can take the pronominal suffixes. Viivyttämättä, *without delay.* Mies meni pois kenenkään huomaamatta, *the man went away without any one remarking it.* Sen asian tunnen sanomattasikin, *I know that without your saying a word.* Hänen hyväsydäminen isänsä ei voinut olla hänelle antamatta tulevaa perintöosuutta, *her good-natured father could not help giving her the part of her inheritance due to her.*

In examples like this the abessive of this infinitive (often with the verb *olla*) serves as a negative form of the other infinitives. Tahtoisin tulla, *I should like to come*; but Tahtoisin olla tulematta, *I should like not to come (to be without coming).* Hän läksi minun nähteni, *he went out while I was looking.* Hän läksi minun näkemättäni, *he went out without my seeing.*

This infinitive is also used in a passive sense, though not in a passive form. Työ on vielä tekemättä, *the work is not yet done (lit. is without doing).* In this sense it serves as a negative of the past passive participle.

This case of the infinitive III is very common in the Kalevala. E. g. iv. 217, Parempi minun olisi, *Parempi olisi ollut Syntymättä, kasvamatta, Suureksi sukeumatta,* which is equivalent to, *better had it been for me not to have been born.* xliii. 417, Vihoiin päivän paistamatta, *Vihoiin kuun kumottamatta,* etc.



*Infinitive IV.*

The fourth infinitive, like the third, is used as a simple substantive. **Se on parhain keino sen oppimiseen, that is the best means for the study of it.** **Viipymisesi on sinua paljo vahingoitanut, your delay has greatly injured you.**

There is also a use of this infinitive analogous to that of infinitive I mentioned above, p. 188. In order to express a continued action the verb is repeated in the partitive of infinitive IV with the pronominal suffix. **Väheta vähenemistään, to grow less and less.** **Äiti kiivastui kiivastumistaan tyttärensä itsepintaisuudesta, the mother grew more and more furious at her daughter's obstinacy.** **Päivä alenee alenemistaan, the sun sinks lower and lower.**

The fourth infinitive is used verbally in two cases:—

(1) In the nominative, as the subject to the verb olla in affirmative sentences. It then denotes the necessity or propriety of performing an action, the subject of which is put in the genitive. **Minun on tämä kirja lukeminen, I ought to read this book, or literally, this book is a reading for me.** **Meidän on tottuminen siihen, we must get used to it.** **Tehty kauppa kiittäminen, tekemätön tietäminen, one should praise a bargain which is made, but enquire into one which is not yet made (prov.).** Copious examples can be found in Kal. xxiii. 61, **Tapa on uusi ottaminen, Entinen unohtaminen, etc.**

(2) The partitive is, agreeably to general rules, used in a similar sense in negative sentences, or interrogative sentences implying a negative. **Ei ole minun tätä kirjaa lukemista, I need not read this book.** **Ei koiraa karvoihin katsomista, one must not judge a dog by his coat.** **Ei pojan isäänsä opettamista, a son should not teach his father.**

In such phrases as *minulla on vielä paljo sanomista*, *I have still much to say*, the partitive depends on the word *paljo*, just as it does in such a sentence as *paljo rahaa*, *much money*.

#### *Infinitive V.*

This infinitive is only a diminutive form derived from infinitive III. As a rule, it is only used in one case, the adessive plural, to denote an action on the point of taking place (cf. infinitive III, E. 1). It always takes the pronominal suffix. *Olin työtä alottamaisillani*, *I was on the point of beginning to work*. *Juna on juuri lähtemäisillänsä*, *the train is just going*. *Aurinko oli katoamaisillaan*, *the sun was just going to set*. *Yhtiö on muodostumaisillaan*, *the company is on the point of being formed*. *Mies oli kaatamaisillaan puuta*, *the man was on the point of felling the tree*.

#### PARTICIPLES.

The participles may be called verbal adjectives, just as the infinitives are verbal substantives. But, as has already been observed, there is no clear distinction between adjectives and substantives in the Finnish language, and the participles are used substantively in many constructions, just as the third infinitive is used adjectively. They sometimes lose all temporal signification and become mere adjectives, as *oppinut*, *learned*; *väsynyt*, *tired*; *mädännyt*, *rotten*.

When used with a verbal meaning the present participles (part. I) indicate an action beginning or continuing, and the past participles (part. II) an action which is completed. The temporal signification is not very marked. It is noticeable that the passive participles have two distinct meanings, one impersonal like the rest of the so-called passive verb, the other distinctly passive.

All the participles can be used—

(1) As attributes or predicates.

(2) To form the compound tenses of verbs in conjunction with the verb *olla*, after the manner already explained.

*Participle I—Active.*

This participle denotes an action taking place or which is to take place in the future, just as the present indicative represents both a present and future tense. *Lentävä lintu saa jotakin, istuva ei mitään, the bird who flies catches something: the bird who sits still nothing. Ei työtä tekevä nälkään kuole, the man who works does not die of hunger. Kysyvä ei tieltä eksy, he who asks does not lose his way. Hukkuva oljen korteenkin tarttuu, a drowning man catches at a straw (provs.).*

In the combination with the verb *olla* it has a future signification (v. p. 176).

The essive of this participle is used with the verb *olla* to signify something pretended by the subject. In this sense it is often in the plural, though the subject itself is singular. *Hän on olevinansa (or olevanansa) oppinut, he pretends to be learned. Hän on paljonkin tietävinänsä, he thinks he knows a great deal. Hän oli lähtevänänsä eilen, mutta ei mennyt, he pretended he was starting yesterday, but did not go.* So also it is used in speaking of dreams and hallucinations. *Minä olin näkevinäni, I thought I saw.* Gen. xxxvii. 7, *Katso, me olimme sitovanamme jalallisia wainiolla (of a dream); cf. Gen. xli. 17, Unessani olin minä seisovana.*

Words ending in *ja* as a rule correspond to English forms in *er*. E. g. *rakentaja, a builder*; that is to say they denote an action, like the present participle, but do not define the time in any way. Sometimes, however, they are used exactly like the present participle, e. g. Kal. xvi. 169, *Se oli poukkujen pesiä*

**Räpähien rämyttäjä**, which means, not *she was a washer-woman*, but *she was washing clothes*. Similarly, **Pappi oli ristijänä**, *the priest was christening a child*. Cf. Kal. x. 111, **Miesten syöjille siolle**.

*Participle II—Active.*

The past active participle expresses an action which has taken place at any past time. **Ei ole vuoksen voittanutta**, **Yli käynyttä Imatran** (Kal. iii. 182), *there is no (waterfall) that has conquered the Vuoksa or surpassed Imatra*. **Äijä on tänne tullehia**, **Ei paljo palannehia** (Kal. xvi. 270), *there are many who have come down here, not many who have gone back*. **Alkää häiritkö nukkunutta**, *wake not the sleeper*.

The translative singular of this participle is used in connection with the verb *tulla* to denote an incidental or chance action. **Hän tuli sanoneeksi, kertoneeksi . . .**, *he happened to say in the course of conversation. . .* **Mennessään kaupunkiin tuli nähneeksi . . .**, *as he went to the town he happened to see. . .* **Puodissa käydessään tuli ostaneeksi uuden maton**, *in going round the shops he happened to buy a new carpet*. Cf. Kal. ii. 149, **Sai toki sanoneheksi**, *scarce had he said it*. **Olkoon menneeksi**, *it does not matter, or let that pass*.

*Participle I—Passive.*

This participle has not a simple temporal signification, but has always an idea of desirability, or necessity. **Kunnioitettava Herra**, *a man to be honoured*. In combination with the verb *olla* it can be used either as a simple adjective, e. g. **se on korjattava**, *that should be corrected*, or as a part of the impersonal passive verb, **sitä on korjattava**. It is sometimes used with a genitive of the agent like the infinitive. **Sentähden oli etsittävä kahdenkeskistä yksinäisyyttä**, *on this account it was*

*necessary to seek for a tête-à-tête interview.* Sanokaa, mitä tietä minun on mentävä, *tell me what road I should take.* Tämä asia on meidän mielellämme pidettävä, *we must keep that in mind.*

The translative singular of this participle is used exactly like the illative of the third infinitive, but with a passive signification. Setä toi kirjoja lasten luettavaksi, *the uncle brought books for the children to read (for the reading of the children).* Hän antoi veitsen hiottavaksi, *he gave the knife to be sharpened.*

#### *Participle II—Passive.*

This participle is really a substantive expressing the result of the verb's action. From this it passes easily to an adjectival meaning. For instance, työ on tehty, *the work is a thing done,* is much the same as *the work is done.* In combination with olla it is used to form tenses of the passive impersonal verb, and as such, can take an object, otherwise it has the same signification as the past passive participle in other languages. Puhuttu puhe ammuttu nuoli, *a word once spoken is an arrow shot forth.* Unhotettu maksettu velka, *a debt paid is forgotten (proverbs).* Jos mun tuttuni tulisi, *if one known by me were to come.*

It is noticeable that when used in this sense the past passive participle does not as a rule take the pronominal suffix. Thus one says, ostettu kirja, *the book that has been bought,* but by preference, ostamani kirja, *the book that has been bought by me.*

Part. II passive is also used substantively in the partitive singular to express an action antecedent to the action of the principal verb. As the original meaning of the partitive is motion from, this is very analogous to the use of the relative of infinitive III. Like other expressions of the same nature (e. g. the inessive of infinitive II) this use is rendered in English by a temporal sentence. The subject of that sentence is represented

in Finnish by a genitive, or by a pronominal suffix, if the subjects of the principal and temporal sentence are the same.

**Jopa tuonne tultuansa, Matkan päähän päästyänsä** (Kal. xlii. 25), *after he had come thither and reached the end of his journey.* **Muutaman päivän kuluttua, after a few days.** **Luettuaan sanomalehtiä ja syötyään aamiaisen, after he had read his paper and eaten his breakfast.** **Kävelyltään palattuun, after returning from his walk.** **Juotuaan kolme, neljä lasia teetä, after drinking three or four glasses of tea.** **Sotamiehen kotiin palattua, when the soldier had come home.** **Päivän laskettua, when the sun had set.**

As however this participle denotes a completed rather than a past action, it is sometimes used in cases where we have to translate it by a present participle. Kal. xvii. 593, **Hyvin laait tultuasi, thou hast done well in coming.** xlii. 284, **Terve, terve tultuasi (terve tuloa is a common expression), hail to thee in thy coming.** These two examples show clearly the substantival character of the participle.

#### *Use of Participles in Oblique Oration.*

The participles have another use in Finnish—viz. they correspond to the construction known in Latin grammar as the accusative and infinitive in subordinate sentences.

In other words, a subordinate sentence which in English begins with the word *that* (and some others), and which might in Finnish be represented by a similar sentence beginning with **että**, can be put in a shorter and more idiomatic form by: (1) omitting the word **että**; (2) replacing the finite verb by the *genitive singular* of the participle; (3) representing the subject by a genitive, partitive, or pronominal affix. Thus **se luulee että hän tekee Jumalalle palveluksen, he thinketh that he doeth God service** becomes **se luulee tekevänsä Jumalalle palveluksen.**

The participle present is used in this construction when the action of the subordinate sentence is coincident with that of the principal sentence or future to it, and the past participle when the action of the subordinate sentence is anterior. *He thinks he will receive the book, luulee kirjan saavansa. He thinks he has received the book, luulee kirjan saaneensa.* Notice that a past tense does not require necessarily the past participle. *Hän luuli lintuja olevan metsässä, he thought there were birds in the wood.* Here the present participle is used because the action of the two verbs is contemporaneous.

The noun or pronoun which is the subject in the expanded sentence is put in the genitive when total, in the partitive when partial, and represented by the pronominal suffix when the subjects of the two sentences are the same. The participle remains in the genitive sing. whatever be the case or number of the subject.

This use is more frequent in affirmative than in negative sentences, but there is no objection to such sentences as *En luule voivani tulla, I do not think I can come,* where the *principal* verb is negated. It is however very rarely used when the verb of the *subordinate* sentence is negated (*vide p. 220* for some curious irregularities in this respect).

Examples:—*Kuin hän siis kuuli hänen sairastavan, when he heard he was ill. Luuletteko olevan mitä vaaraa? do you think there is any danger? Minä päivänä toivotte saapuvanne perille? on what day do you expect to arrive. En usko häntä näkeväni, I don't believe I shall see him. Minä luulen sotamiesten jo saapuneen leiriin, I think the soldiers have already gone to the camp. En usko palvelijan varastaneen rahoja, I do not believe that the servant has stolen the money. Tiedän vieraita tulevan, I know that some strangers have come. Näin vettä sataavan, I see that it is raining. Kuulin laivoja tulleen, I heard that some ships had arrived.*

When the verb *olla* is used in this construction, its complement remains in the same case as it would be in an expanded sentence, *if it is in any case but the nominative singular.*

Luulen että { vesi on hyvää,  
pöika on terveenä,  
syytetyt ovat tuomitut kuolemaan.

become

Luulen { veden olevan hyvää  
pojan olevan terveenä  
syytettyjen olevan tuomitut kuolemaan.

But if the complement is a nominative singular it appears as a genitive singular when the subject is put in that case.

Luulen että poika on ahkera becomes Luulen pojan olevan ahkeran.

It is possible to still more abridge the proposition by rejecting *olevan* and putting the complement in the translative. Luulen pojan ahkeraksi. Tiesi hetkensä tulleeeksi, *he knew that his hour had come.* Huomasin hänen menneeksi, *I noticed he was gone.* Kertoi veneen kaatuneeksi, *he related that the boat had been upset (v. page 158).*

If the predicate of the subordinate sentence in the expanded form is a passive verb, the passive participle can be used in the genitive singular. The subject of such a proposition is always in the partitive. As a rule only part. I passive is used in the genitive, part. II being generally in the translative according to the construction mentioned above.

Tiedän hantä odotettavan, *I know they are waiting for him.* Näin karhua ammuttavan, *I see the bear is being shot at;* but Epäilen karhua tappetuksi, *I doubt if the bear has been killed.* Uskon metsää hakattavan, *I think the forest is being cut down;* but Uskon metsän hakatuksi, *I think the forest has been cut down.*

These participial constructions are also employed when the



verb introducing the subordinate sentence is in the passive form. Under such circumstances the subject of the subordinate sentence may either remain in the nominative or pass into the genitive.

Siinä makasiinissa kuulutaan saatavan oikeata kiinalaista teetä, *this shop is said to receive real Chinese tea*. Sanotaan varustettavan sotaretkeä, *it is said that an expedition is being armed*. Luultiin ihmisiä kuolleen, *it was thought the men were dead*.

The intransitive verbs näkyä, *to be seen*; näyttää, *to appear*; tuntua, *to feel*; kuulua, *to be heard*, also take the genitive of the participle.

Hän kuuluu eronneen miehestään ja lähteneen Pietariin, *she is said to be divorced from her husband and to have left for St. Petersburg*. Et näy tuntevan vanhaa ystävääsi, *you don't seem to know your old friend*. Ei kuulu saadun kaloja, *it is said no fish have been caught*<sup>1</sup>.

#### PREPOSITIONS, POSTPOSITIONS, AND ADVERBS.

As has been already explained in the Accidence the greater number of these words in Finnish are declinable substantives, and take the various cases under just the same rules as an ordinary noun. With the exception of a certain number of petrified and isolated forms, they may be compared to the word *midst* in English. We say *he came from the midst, went into*

<sup>1</sup> Analogy has no doubt played a great part in the development of these constructions, but they clearly have their origin in the use of the participle as a substantive, just like the infinitive. Compare *Minä toivon saada rahoja* with *Minä luulen saavani rahoja* and *Miehet näyttävät tulevan* with *Miehet taitavat tulla*. Compare such Turkish constructions as *بلدکیز گلدییمی bildiniz, you knew I had come*.

*the midst*, or *stood in the midst*. In the language of Finnish grammarians such forms would be considered as adverbs. Whereas in such expressions as *in the midst*, or *from the midst of the crowd*, they would be called postpositions or prepositions. This practice of declining adverbs and postpositions is, however, carried to lengths for which no analogy can be found in English. Thus *myöhä*, is *late* (an adjective), but *to come late* is rendered by *tulla myöhään*, on account of the idea of motion in the verb. *To watch late into the night* is *valvoa myöhälle yötä*, and such an expression as *later on* (of a date) is rendered by the essive *myöhempänä*.

Most, but not all, postpositions, are capable of taking the pronominal affixes, with or without a genitive of the personal pronoun before them.

The subjoined list of prepositions and postpositions gives all the words considered as falling under these categories by ordinary grammars. As a matter of fact, it might very well be either enlarged or curtailed, which last would be better, as some of the words are substantives in ordinary use. But I have thought it better to adhere to the conventional list.

#### I. Postpositions and Prepositions used in only one case.

(1) **Ennen** (instrumental of *ensi*). Preposition followed by partitive. *Before*. **Ennen Kristuksen syntymää**, *before the birth of Christ*. **Ennen aikojansa**, *before one's time*; *too soon*. **Ennen tuloani**, *before I came*.

(2) **Halki**, *across*. Preposition followed by genitive. **Halki metsän**, *through the wood*. **Lenti kokko halki taivon**. (Kal. ii. 265).

(3) **Ilman** (instrumental of *ilma*), *without*, preposition with partitive. **Ilman apua**, *without help*. **Ilman rahaa**, *without money*. **Ilman sitä**, *besides*. Also used with the abessive. **Ilman muiden avutta**, *without the help of others*. **Hän otti**

rahat vastaan ilman lukematta, *he received the money without counting it.* Ilman maan alistamatta, *Ilman kasken kaatamatta* (Kal. ii. 254).

(4) **Kanssa**, *with*. Postposition with the genitive. Pojan kanssa, *with the boy.* Isänsä kanssa, *with his father.* Kanssa takes the pronominal suffixes **Minun kanssani**, **sinun kanssasi**, **hänen kanssansa**, etc. Hän kulki kanssani koko matkan, *he went all the way with me.* Puhuiko hän kanssasi? *did he speak to you?*

(5) **Kautta** (partitive of **kausi**). Postposition after the genitive, *through*, or *by the help of*; like **kanssa** it takes the pronominal suffixes. **Minun kauttani**, *by my help.* Hän on tunnettu isänsä kautta, *he is known on account of his father.* Also used as a preposition in the sense of *all over*. Huhu leviää kautta kaiken kaupungin, *the rumour spreading over the whole city.* Kävelimme kylien kautta, *we went through the villages.*

(6) **Paitsi**, *besides*. Preposition with the partitive. **Paitsi sinua ei ole minulla yhtään ystävää**, *I have no friend but you.* **Paitsi sitä**, *besides this.* **Paitsi veljensä apua olisi hän joutunut hukkaan**, *he would have been ruined without his brother's help.*

(7) **Pitkin**, *along*. Preposition with the partitive. **Käydä pitkin tietä**, *to go along a road.* **Lapset juoksenteleivät pitkin pihoja**, *the children run about in the courts.*

(8) **Poikki**. Postposition or preposition with genitive, *across*. **Kulkea joen poikki**, *to cross the river.* **Jänis juoksi poikki tien**, *the hare ran across the road.*

(9) **Puhki**. Preposition or postposition, *across*. **Luoti meni puhki lasin**, *the bullet came through the glass.*

(10) **Suhteen** (illative of **suhde**), postposition with genitive, *in relation to, compared with*. **Wähä tarpeen suhteen**, *small for*

*one's wants.* Palkan suhteen oli tyytyväinen, *he was satisfied with the remuneration.*

- (11) Takia } postposition with genitive,  
 Tautta } *for the sake of, for, in consequence of.*  
 Tähdän }

Älä minun tähdeni vaivaa näe, *do not trouble on my account.*  
 Kipeän jalkani tautta en voi astua, *I can't stand on account of my bad leg.* Nälän tähden, *from hunger.* Kauppiamies viipyi pari päivää asiansa takia, *the merchant waited a couple of days for affairs.*

(12) Varten. Preposition with partitive. *For, for the use of.* Isä osti vaatteita lapsiansa varten, *the father bought clothes for his children.* Kouluja varten, *for the use of schools.* Mitä varten sinä itket? *why do you weep?*

(13) Vuoksi, *for the sake of, for* (much the same as tähden). Postposition with the genitive. Rahan vuoksi, *for money.* Minä lueskelen huvin vuoksi, *I read for pleasure.*

II. Postpositions and Prepositions which are declined in several cases.

(1) The following words, usually considered as cases of a nominative *ali* which is not found, are used as postpositions with the genitive to express rest or motion under an object.

a. Alla, rest under. Pöydän alla, *under the table.* Paljaan taiwaan alla, *under the open heaven.* Also metaphorically, Hänellä on suuret maat allansa, *large countries are under his dominion.* Johdon alla, *under the direction of.* Oven suussa orren alla, Kal.

b. Alta, motion from under. Koira tuli pöydän alta, *the dog came from under the table.* Itse altansa, *of oneself.* Hän on mies itse altansa, *he is a self-made man.* Karhu nousi petäjän alta, *the bear got up from under the fir tree.*

c. Alle, motion to the place under an object. Koira juoksi

pöydän alle, *the dog ran under the table*. Antaa asia toisten tuomion alle, *to leave a thing to another person's discretion*. Kala ui sillan alle, *the fish swam under the bridge*.

d. Alitse or alatse, expressing motion across a space under an object. Lintu lensi auringon alatse, *a bird flew under (or across) the sun*. Yli kuun, alitse päivän, *above the moon, but below the sun*.

(2) From the nominative asen, *place*, come asemessa and asemesta, postpositions with genitive, *in the place of, instead of*. Miehen asemesta, leivän asemesta, *instead of a man, bread*, etc. Talon pojat suorittavat veronsa rahan asemesta viljassa, *the peasants pay their taxes in corn instead of money*.

(3) From esi, the space before an object, are formed the following postpositions which require the genitive before them.

a. Edessä, rest before. Hevonen on reen edessä, *the horse is (harnessed) in front of the sledge*. Älä seiso edessäni, *do not stand before me*. Pilvet ovat kuun edessä, *there are clouds over the moon*.

b. Edestä, motion from before. Siirtyä jonkun edestä, *to move from before some one, to get out of the way*. Edestä is also used somewhat loosely to express *for, instead of*, etc.; e.g. Kristus kuoli meidän synteimme edestä, *Christ died for our sins*. Tee se minun edestäni, *do it instead of me, for me*.

c. Eteen, the illative, expresses motion into the space before an object. Wiholliset seisahtuivat leirin eteen, *the enemy marched up to the camp and halted*. When used metaphorically, like edestä, it means *for*. Isä tekee työtä lastensa eteen, *the father works for his children*. Katsoa eteensä, *to look before or take care*.

d. Edellä expresses rest on a space before an object, and is nearly the same as edessä, the only difference being that between the inessive and adessive cases. He kävivät minun

edelläni, *they walked before me.* Prepositionit käytetään partitiivin edellä, *prepositions are used before the partitive.*

e. Edelle expresses motion into a place before anything. Hän ajoi hevosensa koko joukon edelle, *he drove his horse on to a place before all the people.* Kuningas asetti johtajat kansan edelle, *the king appointed leaders for the people.*

f. Similarly edeltä expresses motion from a place in front of anything. Mies läksi toisten edeltä, *he went from before the others.*

(3) Joukko, *a crowd, number.*

a. Joukossa, *in the crowd or among.* Postposition with the genitive. Elää ihmisten joukossa, *to live among men.* Älä istu pilkkaajain joukossa, *be not among the scornful.*

b. Joukkoon expresses motion into or with. Katosi kansan joukkoon, *he was lost in this crowd.*

(4) Jälki, *footstep or trace,* is used in several cases to mean *behind,* chiefly of motion.

a. Jälessä, *behind.* Mennä jonkun jälessä, *to walk behind anyone.* Paimen kulkee laumansa jälessä, *the shepherd goes behind his flock.* Tuli minun jälessäni, *he walked behind me.*

b. Jälestä, *behind or after,* with the idea of motion from. Jumalten jälestä ovat ihmiset, *men come next to gods.* Hän tuli minun jälestäni, *he came later than I.* Also used in exactly the same sense as jälessä. Sen jälestä on iso joki, *behind it is a big river.*

c. Jälkeen means simply *after,* the force of the illative case having been lost. Kristuksen syntymän jälkeen, *after the birth of Christ.* Minun luuloni jälkeen, *according to my opinion.* Kello kolmen jälkeen, *after three o'clock.* Minä kirjoitan sanainne jälkeen, *I write from your dictation.*

(5) **Kera**, meaning *company* or *society*, is used as a postposition with the genitive in the nominative, adessive, and allative, in the signification of *with*, or *beside*.

a. **Kera** :—*Sen kera, therewith. Istuin isännän kera, I sat with the master of the house.*

b. **Keralla** :—*Minä menin hänen kerallansa, I went with him. Kenenkä keralla olette olleet? with whom were you?*

c. **Keralle** :—*Tule keralleni, come with me.*

(6) **Keski**, *the middle*. From this are formed the following :—

a. **Kesken**.

i. Preposition with the partitive, or rarely with the genitive, *in the midst of*. *Hän pysähtyi kesken puhettansa, he stopped in the middle of his speech. Poika itki kesken lauluansa, the boy wept in the midst of his song.*

ii. More commonly as a postposition with the genitive. *Heidän kesken syntyi riita, a controversy arose between them. Kahden kesken, tête-à-tête. Olkoon se sanottu kahden kesken, let this be between ourselves. Asia on sovittu miesten kesken, the matter has been arranged among the men.*

b. **Keskenä**, literally, *in the midst*, is used with the nominal suffixes in a reflexive sense which closely resembles the Latin *inter se*. *He pitävät vihaa keskenänsä, they hate one another. Me sovimme keskenämme, we became reconciled. Pilatus ja Herodes tulivat ystäviksi keskenänsä, Pilate and Herod were reconciled.*

c. **Keskellä** (dial. **Kesellä**). Preposition with the partitive, or postposition with the genitive, *in the midst of*. *Keskellä kaupunkia or kaupungin keskellä, in the middle of the town. Keskellä virtaa, in the middle of the stream. Keskellä kesää,*

talvea, yötä, päivää, *in the middle of summer, winter, the night, the day.*

d. **Keskeltä**, *from the midst.* Preposition with the partitive, or, more usually, postposition with the genitive. **Tulla keskeltä peltoa or pellon keskeltä**, *to come from the middle of the field.* **En nähnyt miestä keskeltä huonetta**, *I did not see the man from the middle of the room.*

(7) **Kohta**, *a place (or kohti)* gives the following forms :—

a. **Kohdalla**, **kohdalta**, and **kohdalle**, denote rest in, or motion from and to a place in the vicinity of something else, and are postpositions with the genitive. **Talo on kirkon kohdalla**, *the house is near the church.* **Ota pois tuolit ikkunan kohdalta**, *take the chairs away from the window.* **Katu on laaistu talon kohdalta.**

b. **Kohtaan**, the illative postposition with the partitive, means *for* or *in respect of*. **Hän on hyvä ystäviänsä kohtaan**, *he is good to his friends.* **Rakkaus Jumalaa kohtaan**, *love of God.* **Lapset ovat nöyrät isäänsä kohtaan**, *the children are humble before their father.*

c. **Kohti**, or **kohden**, postpositions with the partitive. **Tulla kaupunkia kohti or kohden**, *to come to the town.* **Hän kulki kotia kohti.** **Maksetaan viisi markkaa päivässä miestä kohden.**

(8) **Liki**. The nominative, adessive, allative, and ablative are used to mean *near*.

a. **Liki**, preposition with partitive. **Talo on liki kaupunkia**, *the house is near the town.* **Reppänä on liki lakea**, *the smoke hole is near the roof.*

b. **Likellä** } are used either as prepositions with the  
 c. **Likelle** } partitive, or as postpositions with the geni-  
 d. **Likeltä** } tive.



**Minä asun kaupungin likellä, or better, likellä kaupunkia, I live near the town.** And similarly the other two cases are used to express motion towards or from the neighbourhood of an object.

(9) **Lähi, neighbourhood,** is used in the adessive, allative, and ablative in exactly the same sense as **liki,** either as a preposition with the partitive, or as a postposition with the genitive. **Kirkon lähellä or lähellä kirkkoa, near the church,** etc. **Rannan lähellä (or lähellä rantaa) kasvavat kaihat. Minä ammuin linnun aivan läheltäni, I shot a bird quite near me.**

(10) **Luo,** which is not found as a substantive in the nominative, is used in the essive, partitive, and translative as a postposition with the genitive.

a. The essive, **luona,** means *with* or *at the house of* (French *chez*). **Lapset asuivat setänsä luona, the children lived with their uncle.**

b. The translative, **luoksi,** is used to express motion to the house or presence of a person. **Milloin tulette minun luokseni? when are you coming to see me? Keisari käski ruhtinaan tulla hänen luoksensa, the emperor ordered the prince to appear before him.**

c. There is a form **luo,** no doubt shortened from **luoksi** and really a translative, which is used in the same sense as **luoksi.** **Minä menen tuttujeni luo, I am going to see my acquaintances.**

d. The partitive **luota** denotes motion from the house or presence of a person. **Lähettiläs tuli keisarin luota, the ambassador came from the emperor. Milloin läksit hänen luotansa? when did you leave him?**

(11) **Läpi, lävitse (läpitse),** mean *across.* **Läpi** means literally *a hole.*

a. **Läpi** is either a postposition with the genitive, or a preposition with the same case. **Kuula meni ikkunan läpi**, *the bullet came through the window*. **Aurinko paistaa läpi ikkunan**, *the sun shines through the window*. **Katosi läpi käsien**, *it fell through his hands and was lost*.

b. **Läpitse** or **lävitse**, the prolativ, is used in much the same sense, expressing a motion along and through an object. **Nuoli tunkesi seinän läpitse**, *the arrow passed through the wall*. **Ei puhalla tuuli turkin lävitse**, *the wind does not pierce through a fur*.

(12) **Muka**, *nearness* or *likeness*.

a. **Muassa**, *with*. Postposition with genitive. **Kulkea muiden muassa**, *to journey in company with others*. **Ei minulla ollut rahoja muassani**, *I had no money about me*.

b. The essive **mukana** is also used in the same sense. **Kuka on sinun mukanas?** *who is with you?*

c. **Mukaan**, postposition with the genitive, means *with*, or *according to*, *agreeably to*, *after*. **Lähteä toisten mukaan**, *to go with the others*. **Tehkää käskyn mukaan**, *do as you are bid*. **Neuvon mukaan**, *according to the advice*. **Luonnon mukaan**, *naturally*. **Tapansa mukaan**, *according to his custom*. **Koetti hän kasvattaa itsensä Turgenjevin naistyyppien mukaan**, *she tried to form herself after Turgenieff's female types*.

(13) a. **Myötä**, postposition with genitive, meaning *with*. **Onko rahoja miesten myötä?** *have the men money with them?* **Hän ei ottanut aseita myötänsä**, *he did not take the arms with him*.

b. **Myöten**, postposition with partitive, meaning *along* or *according to*. **Käydä tietä myöten**, *to follow a road*. **Taantoasi myöten**, *as you wish*. **Virta paisui äyräitänsä myöten**, *the river flowed by its banks*.

(14) *Ohi*, *side*, forms the following postpositions with the genitive.

a. *Ohessa*, *at the side of*. *Istui tien ohessa*, *he sat by the wayside*. *Muun ohessa puhui*, *among other things he said*.

b. *Ohesta*, *from the side*, rarely used. *Nousi tien ohesta*, *he rose from the way side*.

c. { Similarly *ohella* (or *ohilla*), *ohelta*, and *oheen* in  
d. { much the same sense, *by the side of* or *with*.  
e. }

*Hän kulki minun ohellani*, *he came with me*. *Ääni kuului tien ohelta*, *a noise was heard from the road*. *Iso kivi on pellon ohella*, *there is a big stone by the field*. *Istautui tien oheen*, *he sat down by the wayside*.

f. *Ohitse* or *ohi* expresses motion along or by the side of anything. *Kulkea jonkun ohitse*, *to pass a person*. *Me ajoimme heidän ohitsensa* (or *ohi*), *we drove by them*. *Ammuin linnun ohitse*, *I missed (shot beside) the bird*.

(15) *Perä*, the *extreme* or *hinder part* of anything, forms postpositions with the genitive.

a. *Perässä*, *behind*. *Lapsi käy isän perässä*, *the child walks behind the father*. *Sairasvaunut kulkevat sotajoukon perässä*, *the ambulance goes behind the army*.

b. *Perästä*, *behind* or *after*, generally implying that the second object depends on the first, which is thus a point of departure. *Sen perästä*, *afterwards*. *Toinen toisensa perästä*, *one after another*. *Kolmen vuoden perästä*, *after three years*.

c. *Perään*, *after*, implying motion. *Mennä jonkun perään*, *to go to look for some one*. *Katsoa lapsen perään*, *to look after the children*. *Miksi ette lähettäneet minun perääni?* *why did you not send for me?*

(16) The local cases of *Puoli*, a *half* or *side*, are used as postpositions with the genitive.

a. *Puolessa*, at or near. *Turun puolessa*, round *Turku* (*Åbo*). *Pohjan, idän puolessa*, in the *North*, in the *East*.

b. *Puolesta*, from the side of or for, on behalf of. *Puhua itsensä puolesta*, to speak for oneself. *Se tapahtukoon minun puolestani*, it can be done as far as I am concerned. *Sen puolesta, että . . .*, for this reason, that . . . *Hän nousi maansa puolesta*, he rose up for his fatherland.

c. *Puolella*, on the side of. *Tuuli on idän puolella*, the wind is in the *East*. *Olla kuninkaan puolella*, to be on the king's side. N.B. *toisella puolella* followed by partitive. *Toisella puolella järveä*, on the other side of the lake.

d. *Puolelta*, from the side of, from. *Tuli syttyi tuulen puolelta*, the fire burnt in the side when the wind blew.

e. *Puolelle*, to the side of, to. *Mennä vihollisten puolelle*, to go over to the enemy.

f. *Puoleen*, to the side of, to. *Katsoa jonkun puoleen*, to look towards a person. *Kenenkä puoleen minun olisi käännyttävä?* to whom shall I turn?

(17) *Pää*, the head or extremity, forms postpositions with the genitive.

- |                  |   |
|------------------|---|
| a. <i>Päässä</i> | } are used to express a distance or limit in space. |
| b. <i>Päästä</i> |   |
| c. <i>Päähän</i> |   |

*Kuula menee kahden virstan päähän*, the bullet carries two miles. *Suomen raja on jonkun penikulman päässä Pietarista*, the Finnish frontier is some miles from Petersburg. *Minä tunsin tulijan viiden kymmenen sylen päästä*, I recognised the new comer from several yards' distance. *Vihollinen on virstan päässä*, the enemy is a mile off. *Päästä* is also used of time. *Viikon päästä*, after a week.

- d. **Päällä** } express respectively rest on, motion from above  
 e. **Päältä** } or into the space above an object.  
 f. **Päälle** }

Olla veden päällä, *to float*. Tuuli on meren päältä, *the wind comes from the sea*. Lentää katon päälle, *to fly on to the roof*. On sadekaapu palttoon päällä, *there is a cape on the great coat*.

(18) **Rinta**, *breast* or *side*, forms postpositions with the genitive.

- a. **Rinnalla** } expressing rest by, or motion to the side of.  
 b. **Rinnalle** }

Poika istuu isänsä rinnalla, *the boy sits by his father's side*. Laskea joku jonkun rinnalle, *to put some one by some one else*, i. e. *to compare*. Älä pyri hänen rinnallensa, *strive not to be like him*.

Jos arvossa mä oisin

Ja rikkahitten rinnalla.—*Popular song*.

(19) **Seka**, *a mixture* or *collection*, forms postpositions with the genitive.

- a. **seassa** } **Kiiltää kulta rikkojenkin seasta**, *gold glitters*  
 b. **seasta** } *in what one throws away*. **Panna wettä wiin sekaan**, *to mix water with wine*. **Ihmisten seassa**, *among men*. **Seassamme**, *between us*.

(20) **Sisä**, *the interior*, is used as a postposition in all the local cases.

- a. **Sisässä** } **Oletko ollut tämän huoneen sisässä**, *have you been in this room?*  
 b. **Sisästä** } **Kärme tuli puun sisästä**, *the snake came out of the tree*. **Onko kirkon sisällä paljo väkeä**, *are there many people in the church?*  
 c. **Sisään** }  
 d. **Sisällä** }  
 e. **Sisältä** }  
 f. **Sisälle** }

(21) **Taka**, meaning *the space behind anything*, forms postpositions with the genitive.

a. **Takaa** (partitive), *from behind or after*. Hän tuli oven takaa, *he came from behind the door*. Iso honka näkyy koivujen takaa, *there is a great fir behind the beeches*. Wuoden takaa, *after a year*. It means also *according to*. Woimansa takaa, *according to one's power; with all one's might*.

b. **Takana** (essive), *behind*. Käydä jonkun takana, *to go behind or follow any one*. Seisoa seinän takana, *to stand behind the wall*. Rahat on takanani, *the money is in my keeping*. Olla turvan takana, *to be under the protection of*.

c. Translative—**taaksi**, **taakse**, **taa**, *back, backwards, or across*. Katsoa taaksensa, *to look backwards*. Lähteä meren taaksi (or taa), *to go across the sea*. Aurinko laskeutuu vuorten taa, *the sun sets behind the mountains*.

(22) **Sisäpuoli**, *interior*, is used in the adessive, ablative, and allative.

a. **Sisäpuolella** Suomalaiset kanssaheimot eivät asu kaikki suomen rajain sisäpuolella, *all the Finnish tribes do not live within the Finnish frontier*.

b. **Kuuluiko ääni huoneen sisäpuolelta?** *was the voice heard within the room?*

c. **Paimen ajoi lampaat aitauksen sisäpuolelle**, *the shepherd drove the sheep into the sheepfold*.

(23) **Tykö**, *nearness*, forms postpositions with the genitive which have exactly the same meaning as the corresponding cases of **luo**. **Tyköä**, *from*; **työ**, *to* (e. g. minä tulen miehen työ); **tykönä**, *at or with*. The form **työ** is due to the fact that a termination, probably that of the translative, has been lost. It is only used dialectically.

(24) *Ulkopuoli* (cf. *sisäpuoli*), *the exterior*, is used in the adessive, allative, and ablative as either a preposition with the partitive or a postposition with the genitive. *Kaupungin ulkopuolella* or *ulkopuolella kaupunkia*, *outside the town*. Similarly are employed the other cases to express motion to or from the outside of anything.

(25) *Vasta*, *the place opposite anything*.

a. *Vastassa*, postposition with the genitive, means *opposite, facing*. *Hänen vastassansa*, *opposite him*. *Toistensa vastassa olevat kaupungit*, *the cities lie facing each other*.

b. *Vastaan*, postposition with the genitive, has the same meaning with the idea of motion towards added, which however seems to disappear in many metaphorical uses. *Mennä isän vastaan*, *to meet one's father*. *Minä en ole sitä vastaan*, *I am not against that*. *Tehdä käskyä vastaan*, *to disobey a command*. *Sitä vastaan*, *on the other hand*.

c. *Vastoin* (instructive plural) is a preposition with the partitive, meaning *against* or *contrary to*. *Vastoin virtaa, tuulta*, *against the river, the wind*. *Vastoin tahtoani*, *against my wish*. *Älkää pakottako tyttäriänne vastoin mieltä*, *do not compel your daughters against their will*. *Vastoin lakia*, *against the law*.

d. *Vasten*<sup>1</sup> (instructive singular from a form *vasti*), preposition or postposition with the partitive, is used in much the same sense as *vastoin*, but means also (1) *about, towards*. E. g. *älä lyö poikaa vasten silmiä*, *don't hit the boy about the eyes*. *Hän sai vasten silmänsä*, *he got one in the eye*; (2) as a postposition with the genitive it means *for, on account of*. *Moni tekee työtä ainoastansa omaa hyötyänsä vasten*, *many work only for their own profit*. But *varten* is better in this sense.

<sup>1</sup> *Vasiten* or *vaseten* occurs in dialects.

e. **Vastapäätä** is used in the meaning of *opposite* or *vis-à-vis*, as a preposition with the partitive. **Kirkko on rakennettu vastapäätä raastupaa**, *the church is opposite the court-house.*

(26) **Väli**, *the midst*, forms postpositions with the genitive. All the local cases are used: **Välissä, välistä, väliin, välillä, välille, välitse**. **Kirkon ja pappilan välillä on maantie**, *there is a road between the church and the parsonage.* **Kansan välitse**, *through the midst of the people.* **Sano hänelle suoraan silmien väliin**, *tell him to his face.*

(27) **Yli**, meaning the place above anything, is used in various forms as a preposition or a postposition with the genitive.

a. **Yli** (1) as a preposition with the genitive expresses existence above an object; e.g. **Pilvet liitävät yli meren, yli maan**, *the clouds glide over land and sea.* **Yli päämme on kirkas taivas**, *the bright heaven is above us.* We also find expressions like **kello on yli viiden**, *it is after five o'clock.* It also expresses metaphorically pre-eminence. **Hän on kunntoitettava yli muiden**, *he is more honourable than the rest.* It is used metaphorically in such expressions as **yli vuoden**, *more than a year*; **maata yli aikansa**, *to sleep too long.* **Yli sen mitä ennen on maksettu**, *what has been paid in addition to previous payments.*

(2) **Yli** is also used as a postposition with the genitive, and as such expresses motion over a thing, so that the object moving remains temporally above it. **Matto on levitetty koko lattian yli**, *the carpet is spread over all the floor.* **Hän tuli vähän yli puoliwäliin matkaa**, *he came a little over half way.* **Hän katseli olan yli**, *he looked over his shoulders.*

b. **Ylitse** (prolative) expresses motion over and across an object. **Purjehtia meren ylitse**, *to sail across the sea.* **Kun pääsisi tämän raskaan ajan ylitse**, *when one has got over these hard times.*



c. **Yllä** } literally expressing rest on, and motion from or to  
 d. **Yltä** } the space above an object, are used as postpositions  
 e. **Ylle** } with the genitive to express the wearing, putting  
 on or taking off of clothes. *Pojan yllä on uusi takki, the boy has a new coat on. Hänellä on vaatteet yllänsä, he has clothes on. Riisua vaatteet yltänsä, to take off one's clothes. Panna, pukea yllensä; to put on clothes. Cf. oli loassa yltä päältä (adverb), to be dirty from head to foot.*

(28) **Ympäri**, the space surrounding, gives the following forms.

a. **Ympäri** is used as a postposition with the genitive *Laiva purjehti maan ympäri, the ship sailed round the land.* It is also used as a preposition with the genitive or partitive in much the same sense. *Riittikö oma leipä ympäri vuoden? is your own corn enough for the year?*

b. **Ympäriellä** } are postpositions with the genitive expressing  
 c. **Ympärieltä** } rest in, motion from or to the space round an  
 d. **Ympärielle** } object.

*Kuori on puun ympäriellä, the tree has bark round it. Panna sontaa puun ympärielle, to manure a tree. Metsät ovat kadonneet kaupungin ympäriltä, the forests have been cut down round the town. Miksi on kääre sormesi ympärillä? why have you a bandage on your finger? Ota huivi kaulan ymperiltä, take the handkerchief from round your neck.*

#### NEGATIVE SENTENCES.

As has been explained, the negative in Finnish only exists in combination with the personal pronouns as a negative verb, and there is no word corresponding to *no* or *not*. This peculiarity naturally makes the structure of negative sentences different from that of other languages.

(1) The answer 'no' to a question must be rendered by the proper person of the negative verb, with or without the root of

the verb negative. To the question *Tuletteko?* *are you coming?* the negative answer is *en tule* or *en*, if one person is referred to, but *emme tule* or *emme*, if more than one. Similarly, to *tulevatko lapset?* *are the children coming?* the negative reply must be *eivät tule* or *eivät*.

(2) If a sentence contains such words as *never*, *no one*, *nothing*, *nowhere*, etc., they are expressed by using the proper person of the negative verb, with the proper case of the interrogative pronoun or the interrogative adverb, which receive the termination *kaan* or *kään*, sometimes shortened into *aan* or *ään*. *Emme ole nähneet ketäkään* or *ketään*, *we have seen no one*. *Missä olette käyneet?* *En missäkään*, *where have you been?* *Nowhere*. *Onko hän koska ollut Helsingissä?* *Ei koskaan* (or *Ei milloinkaan*) *has he ever been to Helsingfors?* *No, never*.

(3) It is clear that as the negative is always joined to a personal pronoun, sentences where it qualifies an infinitive in most languages (for instance, *it would be better not to go*) cannot by any means be rendered literally in Finnish. Such sentences are turned quite differently, the chief device being to use the abessive of inf. III; for instance, *I advise you not to go*, *minä kehoitan teitä, älkää menkö, or olemaan menemättä*. *Olisi parempi olla kirjoittamatta*, *it would be better not to write*. *The house is not sold*, *talo on myömättä* (but *ei ole myöty* is also possible). *The present is not given*, *lahja on antamatta* (or *ei ole annettu*). *You need not go*, *ei sinun pidä mennä* (where *ei* negatives *pidä not mennä*), or *sinun pitää olla menemättä*. *You will have to go away and not see your sister*, *teidän pitää matkustaa pois sisartanne näkemättä*.

Sentences are occasionally found where *ei* apparently negatives an infinitive. E. g. S. John vii. 34, *Teidän pitää minua etsimän ja ei löytämän*, *ye shall seek me and not find me*.

But this construction is really elliptical for **ja ei pidä löytämän**.

Nevertheless this use of the negative verb with an infinitive or participle is occasionally found, even in the Kalevala; e. g. xxviii. 262, **Sie vanno valat ikuiset . . . ei sotia käyäksesi, swear eternal oaths . . . that thou wiltst not go to war.** And immediately afterwards, **Vannon mie valat vakaiset En kesänä ensimmäisnä . . . Saa'a suurihin sotihin, I swear firm oaths that in the first summer . . . I will not go to war.** Here **käyäksesi** and **saa'a** (for **käydäksesi** and **saada**) are infinitives constructed with **ei** and **en**. In the first passage **et** would have seemed more natural. So again in xliii. 237, **Sanoit et käyväsi sotoa, thou saidst thou wouldst not go to war.** As these constructions do not seem capable of being explained by the principles of Finnish syntax, they are probably due to the influence of foreign languages.

#### INTERROGATIVE SENTENCES.

If an interrogative sentence does not contain an interrogative pronoun or adverb, its character is marked by adding the particle **ko** or **kö** to some word in the sentence. Thus one says **menettekö kotiin?** *are you going home?* But in such sentences as **mihin menette?** or **kuka menee?** it is unnecessary to use **ko**, as the sentence already contains a word which makes its interrogative character clear. It will be noticed that this use of **ko** is exactly similar to that of **ли** in Russian.

The termination **ko, kö** is added to the word on which the chief interrogative stress is laid.

**Tiedättekö mihin hän on lähtenyt?** *do you know where he is gone?* **Isäkö sen sanoi?** *was it the father who said so?* **Meritsekö aiotte matkustaa?** *are you thinking of going by sea?*

In a negative question the termination *kö* is always attached to the negative verb. *Ettekö ole nähneet häntä?* *have you not seen him?* *Eikö jo lakkaa satamasta?* *hasn't it stopped raining yet?*

In a disjunctive question the particle *ko, kö* is attached to the first alternative which is connected with the second by the word *vai*. *Poikako se on vai tyttö?* *is that a boy or a girl?*

But if there are two verbs in the sentence *ko* or *kö* is added to each. *Onko hän vielä kotona vai läksikö?* *is he still at home or has he started?*

In such a sentence as, *Are you coming or not?* one can say either *Tuletteko vai ette?* or, *tuletteko vai ettekö tule?*

The manner of giving a negative reply has been described above. Though there are two words, *ja* and *niin* (instr. plural of *se*), which can be used for 'yes,' the usual way of giving an affirmative reply is, to repeat the word which in the question has *ko* attached to it. *Tuliko pappi?* *has the priest come?* *Tuli, yes.*

#### OTHER SENTENCES.

Causal, temporal and consecutative sentences offer no special peculiarities, being introduced by the conjunctions given in the accident and having the verb in the indicative mood. The particle *että* is generally combined with the negative verb: *etten, ettet, ettei*, etc.

Concessive sentences, introduced by *vaikka, vaikkapa, or jos kohta*, have the verb in either the indicative or the conditional. *Hän oli niin köyhä ettei ollut mitä syödä, he was so poor that he had nothing to eat.* *Vaikka näin häntä usein, kun olin Pietarissa (or Pietarissa olessani), emme kuitenkaan ole tutut, though I often saw him when I was at Petersburg, we were not well acquainted.* *Vaikka hän vannoi en sittekään uskoisi, though he should swear I would not believe him.*

The first member of a conditional sentence is introduced by *jos*, or, if negative, by *jollen*, *ellen* (*jollet*, *jollei*, etc., *allet*, *ellei*, etc.). The second is often introduced by *niin*. In such sentences as *if I go, he will come*, where the realization of the condition is considered as certain, the indicative is used—*Jos menen niin hän tulee*. But where the realization is doubtful the conditional present is employed, and where it is no longer possible the conditional past. *If I were to go, he would come*, *jos menisin, niin hän tulisi*. *If I had gone, he would have come*, *jos minä olisin mennyt, niin hän olisi tullut*.

Final sentences are introduced by *että* or *jotta*, or in the negative form by *etten*, *ettet*, *ettei*, etc. The verb is in the conditional. As has been described above (pp. 192 and 198) final sentences can also be rendered by infinitives and participles. *Ilmoittakaat minulle että minäkin tulisin ja kumartaisin häntä* (S. Matt. ii. 8), *tell me, that I may come and worship him*. *Hän kävelee ettei vilustuisi, he walks that he may not catch cold*.

#### ORATIO OBLIQUA.

A sentence in oratio obliqua can be rendered by the participial constructions above described, or by a sentence beginning with *että*, *that*. In this latter case the sentence is constructed exactly as in English.

*Hän sanoi ettei se ole varma, mutta että koettaisi tiedustaa tarkemmin, he said it was not certain, but that he would endeavour to obtain more accurate information*. *Minä kysyin häneltä oliko hän kuullut että ystäväni oli kuollut ja pyysin että hän kirjoittaisi, I asked him if he had heard that my friend was dead, and begged him to write*.

The word *muka* is often used to denote that a statement rests not on the authority of the speaker but of some one else.

*Hän ei tahtonut viipyä : oli muka kovin väsyksissä, he did*

*not want to wait, saying he was very tired.* Luulevat hänen veljensä tulevan : hän oli muka kirjoittanut jollekulle, *people think his brother is coming : it is said he has written to some one.* Hän erotti palvelijansa se kun oli muka varas, *he dismissed his servant because he was a thief* (according to his master's statement).

### ON THE DIALECT OF THE KALEVALA.

There are two main dialects of Finnish, the Western, which has produced the modern literary language, and the Eastern, in which the Kalevala is written. There are also many others of which perhaps the most important is that called the Savolaks dialect, which is hardly a literary language, though in the 'Lönrötin Albumi,' p. 286, there is a story called 'Keisarin tuttu' written in it. It appears to be characterized by a great fondness for the sound of *i*, which is added to other vowels; e. g. *tiällä* for *täällä*, *hiän* for *hän*. On the other hand *i* is often apparently shortened to a semivowel, merely modifying the previous consonant; e. g. *oij* for *oi*. The letter *d* does not occur, but is represented by *j* or *v*, *meijänni* for *meidänkin*, *käyvä* for *käydä*. The dialect would seem to be generally characterized by a soft and rather thick utterance. *Olen* becomes *oun* and *olette*, *outta*. *V* is frequently doubled; e. g. *hyvvee päivee*, and *o* is often used for *a*; e. g. *mokomoo* for *mokomaa*. So also we have forms like *soatanoo* for *saatanee*, *pankoo* for *pankaa*. The root of verbs has the letter *k* added in the negative and imperative forms : *en annak*, *annak*.

On the Eastern frontier of Finland and in the adjoining parts of the Russian Government of Olonetz is spoken a dialect called Karelian, which in its present form is much corrupted by the

influence of Russia. The Kalevala, however, which was mostly collected in this part of the world, is written in a pure Finnish dialect, which has come to be accepted as the ordinary language of poetical composition.

The chief peculiarities of the dialect of the Kalevala are as follows<sup>1</sup>:—

I. The letter *d* does not exist. *T* disappears altogether in the cases where in the ordinary dialect it is softened to *d*. For instance—*saa'a* (*saada*), *pöyän* (*pöydän*), *tieän* (*tiedän*), *tahon* (*tahdon*), *kahen* (*kahden*), *yhen* (*yhden*), *puhas* (*puhdas*), *ouoille* (*oudoille*), *eellä*, *eessä* (*edellä*, *edessä*), *sio* (*sido*).

II. Similarly the letter *k* is dropped altogether when in literary Finnish it either becomes *j* or remains unchanged.

(1) *lk*, *rk* in a closed syllable become simple *l* and *r*, not *lj*, *rj*: e. g. *jälen* for *jäljen* (*jälki*), *külen* for *kuljen*.

(2) *sk* and *tk*, which are not subject to softening in ordinary Finnish, become *s* and *t* in closed syllables: *kosen* for *kosken*, *kaselle* for *kaskelle*, *itettävä* for *itkettävä*.

III. *rt*, *lt* are not assimilated in the infinitive of verbs of conj. 3: *kuulta*, *surten* for *kuulla*, *surren*,

IV. The pronominal affixes do not always prevent consonants being softened as in ordinary Finnish: *ajansa* for *aikansa*, *iäni* for *ikäni*.

V. Where long vowels and diphthongs are the result of contraction, the Kalevala employs dissyllabic forms. These contracted forms in ordinary Finnish may be divided into two classes.

<sup>1</sup> I should say that in this account I am deeply indebted to the Finnish introduction to the edition of the Kalevala, published in 1887 at Helsingfors.

(a) The long vowel is the result of the omission of *h* (representing an original *s* or other consonant) between the two component vowels. In such cases the Kalevala always employs the fuller and more primitive forms with *h*. So we have *vierahan* for the literary *vieraan*, *kotihin* for *kotiin*, *käyhän* for *käydään* (*d* omitted).

(b) But there are a number of cases where the long vowels *aa* and *ää* in ordinary literary Finnish are not the result of the omission of *h*. Under these circumstances the Kalevala has *oa* instead of *aa* and *eä* instead of *ää*. Thus the partitive singular of *kala* is formed by suffixing *a*—that is *kala-a*. In ordinary Finnish this gives *kalaa* (dissyllabic), but in the Kalevala we find *kaloa*. This form may be compared with the partitive plural, *kaloja*, where *a* becomes *o* in ordinary Finnish. It is to be noted however that the change to *oa* occurs in the Kalevala even when the vowel of the first syllable is *a*—*oroa* for *oraa*.

The instances of this change fall under three categories :

(1) Partitive cases of nouns and adjectives : *aikoa* for *aikaa*, *ilmoa* for *ilmaa*, *luutoa* for *luutaa*, *päiveä* for *päivää*, *tereä* for *terää*.

(2) The first infinitive of verbs : *ajoa* for *ajaa*, *eleä* for *elää*, *lenteä* for *lentää*, *piteä* for *pitää*.

(3) Contracted verbs of class 3 : *arvoan* for *arvaan*, *lupoan* for *lupaan*, *lepeämättä* for *lepäämättä*.

VI. The plural (except the nom.) is sometimes formed with the suffix *-loi*, before the case suffix. This form is used chiefly in words ending in *o*, *ö*, *u*, *y*, *i*, and *e*; e.g. *rekilöitä*, *ristilöitä*, *lukkoloita*, *mahtiloita*.

VII. The style of the Kalevala is characterized by the frequent use of derivative forms from nouns ending in *o*, *nen* (*or*



onen), yt (*or* ut), and kainen. These forms have a diminutive or endearing significance. They are mostly quite incapable of translation into English, but correspond to the Russian diminutives. E. g. from *emä* are formed *emo*, *emonen*, and *emyt*: from *isä*, *iso*, *isonen*, and *isyt*: from *kaunis*, *kauno*, *kaunokainen* *or* *kaunukainen*; from *kesä*, *kesonen* and *kesyt*: from *meri*, *meronen* and *meryt*: from *neiti*, *neitinen*, *neito*, *neitonen*, *neiyt*, and *neityinen*: from *puu*, *puuhut*: from *päivä*, *päivönen* and *päivyt*: from *veli*, *velo*, *vello*, *veljyt*, *veljo*, *veito*, *veitonen*, *veikko*, and *veikkonen*.

We also find a great quantity of derivative verbs ending in *ella*, *skella*, *ahta*, *alta*, etc., in which the exact force of the syllable added is often obscure.

VIII. In verbs the 3rd person sing. of the present is formed with the suffix *vi*, a weakening of the original *pi* used in monosyllables. E. g. *tekevi*, *ajattalevi*, *sanovi*, *ajavi*, *kaatelevi*. But in monosyllables *pi* is always used, *uipi*, *saapi*.

IX. Some verbal stems ending in *a* or *ä* reject this vowel before *t*, *k*, *n*, and are conjugated as if they belonged to the third class. Thus *löytää* forms the past participle *löynnyt* for *löytänyt*: *tietää* forms concessive *tiennen* and past part. *tiennyt*. So *seista*, *seiskaamme*, *seissut* from *seiso*.

X. In the formation of the passive many verbs ending in *ta*, *tä* reject this syllable and also the consonant *n*, if it precedes. *Löytää* makes the passive stem *löyttä* instead of *löydettä*: *rakentaa*, *raketta* for *rakennetta*: *kuumentaa*, *kuumetta* for *kuumennetta*.

XI. The conjugation of the reflexive verbs (as already mentioned) offers a mass of forms unknown to literary Finnish, which sometimes also occur in verbs which are not strictly reflexive.

The chief terminations found in these verba are:—

*Indicative present:*

- Sing. 1. *me or ime*—*luome, kaivaime.*  
 2. *tet, itet, or te*—*pistätet.*  
 3. *kse, ikse, or ksen*—*astuikse, istuikse, astuiksen.*  
*katselleikse.*

*Imperfect.*

- Sing. 1. *ime*—*annoime, siirime, siirräime.*  
 2. *ihet or ihit*—*astelihet, suorihet.*  
 3. *ihe or iin*—*ajoihe, loihe, vetihe, pistihe, rikkoihe,*  
*heittiin.*

The termination *ime* is also found in the 1st pers. sing. of the conditional and *ihe* in the 3rd sing. of the concessive and conditional. The 2nd sing. of the Imper. often ends in *te* or *ite*—*veäite (vedä itsesi), laskeite, paneite.* The inf. of such verbs generally ends in *itä*; e. g. *vetäitä.* Rarely are found such forms as *kuolkosi, kaotkosi* for *kuollos, etc.*

XII. The negative verb frequently follows instead of preceding the root which it negatives; e. g. *oisi en paljo pitänyt, maha et lausua lapiksi.*

XIII. The style of the Kalevala is characterized by a general absence of conjunctions and connecting particles, but on the other hand abounds in syllables used merely to give emphasis or quite pleonastically. Such are the suffixes *pa, pä, han, hän, kana.* The word *on* is used in the same way; e. g. *juop' on vanha Wäinämöinen. Tuop' on Pohjalan emäntä sanan virkkoi. Enpä anna tyttöäni.*

XIV. A number of other differences from the literary dialect occur, some of which may be classified as follows:—

- (1) Contracted essives, where the ordinary language prefers

the full form : *lasna* for *lapsena* ; *nuorra* for *nuorena* ; *suurra* for *suurena*.

(2) In pronouns *ma*, *mä*, or *mie* for *minä* ; *sa*, *sä*, *sie* for *sinä* ; *milma*, *silma* for *minua*, *sinua* ; *miusta* for *minusta* ; *siulle* for *sinulle*, *ka* or *ken* for *kuka*, *mi* for *mikä*.

(3) From the verb *olla* are found *oo* for *ole* ; *oisi* for *olisi* ; *lie*, *liet* for *lienee*, *lienet* ; *liekkö* for *lieneekö*.

(4) The imperf. ends in *ti* where in ordinary Finnish it is softened to *si* : *kynti*, *löyti*, *kaati*, *pyyti* for *kynsi*, *löysi*, *kaasi*, *pyysi*.

XV. The syntax of the Kalevala is marked by extreme simplicity in its main features. This is natural in popular poetry, and, besides, the system of versification (short lines of eight syllables generally containing a complete sentence) and the tendency to parallelism and repetition, were all unfavourable to the growth of long and involved phrases. On the other hand, the sentences of the Kalevala are often difficult to understand on account of their irregularity. Not only are the boldest inversions and omissions permitted (e. g. *Emo tuosta itkemähän for rupesti itkemähän*), but words are frequently strung together in so loose a manner that, though the thought is plain, it is almost impossible to analyse the sentence grammatically. For instance, xl. 401, *Anna luoja, suo Jumala, Anna onni ollaksemme, Hyvin ain' eleäksemme, kunnialla kuollaksemme*. This clearly means, *grant that we may be prosperous, live well and die gloriously*, but it is almost impossible to explain it grammatically. Such a tendency to be more careful of the general sense than of the separate words and their correct relation to one another, is very natural in a poem whose authors were ignorant of grammar and had probably no written literature before them. It is accompanied in the Kalevala by a habit of repeating the same idea under numerous synonyms

for the sake of emphasis and of creating new words for the sake of parallelism or alliteration, which have sometimes a meaning and bear testimony to the flexibility and fecundity of the language, but sometimes are absolutely unmeaning. Thus in Kal. xi. 55 we have **Enkä lähe Inkerelle, Penkerelle, pänkerelle**. Here **pänkerelle** means nothing at all, but is simply a kind of repetition of **penkerelle**. Similarly Kal. xlvi. 100, **Ihvenä, ahvenia, Tuimena, taimenia**. **Ihvenä** and **Tuimena** are meaningless words.



SELECTIONS

FROM

FINNISH LITERATURE

## PYHÄN JOHANNEKSEN EVANGELIUMI.

1. Alussa<sup>1</sup> oli<sup>2</sup> Sana<sup>3</sup> ja<sup>4</sup> se<sup>5</sup> Sana<sup>3</sup> oli<sup>2</sup> Jumalan<sup>6</sup> tykönä<sup>7</sup> ja<sup>4</sup> Jumala<sup>6</sup> oli<sup>2</sup> se<sup>5</sup> Sana<sup>3</sup>.
2. Tämä<sup>8</sup> oli<sup>2</sup> alussa<sup>1</sup> Jumalan<sup>6</sup> tykönä<sup>7</sup>.
3. Kaikki<sup>9</sup> ovat<sup>10</sup> sen<sup>11</sup> kautta<sup>12</sup> tehdyt<sup>13</sup> ja<sup>4</sup> ilman<sup>14</sup> sitä<sup>15</sup> ei<sup>16</sup> ole<sup>16</sup> mitään<sup>17</sup> tehty<sup>16</sup> joka<sup>18</sup> tehty<sup>13</sup> on<sup>19</sup>.
4. Hänessä<sup>20</sup> oli<sup>2</sup> elämä<sup>21</sup> ja<sup>4</sup> elämä<sup>21</sup> oli<sup>2</sup> ihmisten<sup>22</sup> valkeus<sup>23</sup>.
5. Ja<sup>4</sup> se<sup>5</sup> valkeus<sup>23</sup> pimeydessä<sup>24</sup> paistaa<sup>25</sup> jota<sup>26</sup> ei<sup>27</sup> pimeys<sup>24</sup> käsittänyt<sup>27</sup>.
6. Yksi<sup>28</sup> mies<sup>29</sup> oli<sup>30</sup> lähetetty<sup>30</sup> Jumalalta<sup>31</sup> jonka<sup>32</sup> nimi<sup>33</sup> oli<sup>2</sup> Johannes<sup>34</sup>.

N.B. When a *rule* is cited by a number, this refers to the numbered phonetic rules from page 6 to page 18.

<sup>1</sup> Inessive sing. of *alku*, formed with suffix *u* (p. 45); verb *alkaa*, *to begin*; *alkussa* becomes *alussa* by rule 27.      <sup>2</sup> 3rd pers. sing. imperf. of *olla*, *to be* (p. 72).      <sup>3</sup> Nom. sing. identical with stem; cf. verb *sanoo*, *to speak*.      <sup>4</sup> Conjunction borrowed from the Swedish, *and*.  
<sup>5</sup> Nominative of demonstr. pron. (p. 59) used almost like article (p. 166).  
<sup>6</sup> *Jumala*, gen. *Jumalan*, *God*.      <sup>7</sup> Essive sing. of *tykö*; postposition governing *Jumalan* (p. 215).      <sup>8</sup> Nominative sing. of demonstr. pron. (p. 58).      <sup>9</sup> Nominative plur. without term. (pp. 61 and 170).      <sup>10</sup> 3rd pers. plur. pres. of *olla* (p. 72).      <sup>11</sup> Gen. sing. of demonstr. *se* (p. 59).  
<sup>12</sup> *Kautta*, postposition governing gen. *sen* (p. 204).      <sup>13</sup> *tehty*, past part. pass. of root *teke* (rule 41); nominative plur. *tehdyt* (rule 32). Here the participle is used in combination with *ovat* to form perf. passive (p. 74).      <sup>14</sup> Preposition governing the partitive *sitä* (p. 203).  
<sup>15</sup> Partitive sing. of demonstr. pron. *se*.      <sup>16</sup> *ei ole tehty*, negative perf. passive of root *teke* (p. 74).      <sup>17</sup> Partitive sing. of *mikä* with suffix

## THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. JOHN, I. 1-14.

1. In-the-beginning was the-Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.
2. That was in-the-beginning with God.
3. All were made through Him, and without Him was not anything made which was made.
4. In-Him was life, and the-life was the-light of-men.
5. And that light shineth in-the-darkness, which the-darkness comprehended not.
6. A man was sent from-God whose name was John.

an (pp. 61 and 219). For explanation of use of partitive here *v.* p. 183.

<sup>18</sup> Nom. sing. of rel. pron.      <sup>19</sup> 3rd pers. sing. pres. of olla.      <sup>20</sup> Iness.

sing. of personal pron. hän.      <sup>21</sup> Nom. sing. formed from root *elä* with

suffix *mä* (p. 45).      <sup>22</sup> Gen. plur. of *ihminen* declined like *toinen*

(p. 35).      <sup>23</sup> Stem *valkeute* (nominative *-us*, p. 36) formed by adding

affix *ute* to root *valke* (cf. *valkea*, *white* or *fire*, and *valjeta*).      <sup>24</sup> Stem

*pimeyte*, nominative *pimeys*; substantive formed from *pimeä*, *dark*,

analogous to *valkeus*, but with soft termination; *pimeydessä* is inessive

sing.      <sup>25</sup> 3rd pers. sing. pres. of root *paista*.      <sup>26</sup> Jota, part. sing.

of relative pron. object of negative verb (p. 127).      <sup>27</sup> 3rd sing. negative

imperf. (p. 70) of verbal root *käsitä*, *to grasp* or *understand* (exact equivalent

of comprehendere).      <sup>28</sup> *Yksi*, *one*, here used as the indefinite article,

p. 51.      <sup>29</sup> Nominative sing. of stem *miehe*, *man*.      <sup>30</sup> Plupf.

passive of *lähetää*, *to send*; pres. passive *lähetetään*, past part. *-etty*

(p. 67).      <sup>31</sup> Ablative sing. of *Jumala*, *God*.      <sup>32</sup> Genitive sing. of

relative pron. *joka*.      <sup>33</sup> Nominative sing. of stem *nime*.      <sup>34</sup> Nomi-

native sing. of stem *Johannekse* (p. 36).



7. Se<sup>35</sup> tuli<sup>36</sup> siitä<sup>37</sup> valkeudesta<sup>38</sup> todistamaan<sup>39</sup> että<sup>40</sup> kaikki<sup>9</sup> uskoisivat<sup>41</sup> hänen<sup>42</sup> kauttansa<sup>43</sup>.

8. Ei<sup>44</sup> hän<sup>45</sup> ollut<sup>44</sup> se<sup>5</sup> valkeus<sup>38</sup> mutta<sup>46</sup> hän<sup>45</sup> oli<sup>30</sup> lähetetty<sup>30</sup> valkeudesta<sup>38</sup> todistamaan<sup>39</sup>.

9. Se<sup>35</sup> oli<sup>3</sup> totinen<sup>47</sup> valkeus<sup>38</sup> joka<sup>18</sup> valistaa<sup>48</sup> kaikki<sup>9</sup> ihmiset<sup>49</sup> jotka<sup>50</sup> maailmaan<sup>51</sup> tulevat<sup>52</sup>.

10. Se<sup>35</sup> oli<sup>3</sup> maailmassa<sup>53</sup> ja<sup>4</sup> maailma<sup>54</sup> on<sup>19</sup> hänen<sup>42</sup> kauttansa<sup>43</sup> tehty<sup>13</sup> jä<sup>4</sup> ei<sup>55</sup> maailma<sup>54</sup> häntä<sup>56</sup> tuntenut<sup>55</sup>.

11. Hän<sup>45</sup> tuli<sup>36</sup> omillensa<sup>57</sup> ja<sup>4</sup> ei<sup>58</sup> hänen<sup>42</sup> omansa<sup>60</sup> häntä<sup>56</sup> ottaneet<sup>58</sup> vastaan<sup>53</sup>.

12. Mutta<sup>46</sup> niille<sup>61</sup>, jotka<sup>60</sup> hänen<sup>42</sup> ottivat<sup>62</sup> vastaan<sup>59</sup>, antoi<sup>63</sup> hän<sup>45</sup> voiman<sup>64</sup> Jumalan<sup>6</sup> lapsiksi<sup>65</sup> tulla<sup>66</sup> jotka<sup>60</sup> uskovat<sup>67</sup> hänen<sup>42</sup> nimensä<sup>68</sup> päälle<sup>69</sup>;

13. Jotka<sup>60</sup> ei<sup>70</sup> verestä<sup>71</sup> eikä<sup>70</sup> lihan<sup>73</sup> tahdosta<sup>73</sup> ei<sup>70</sup> myös<sup>74</sup> miehen<sup>75</sup> tahdosta<sup>73</sup> mutta<sup>46</sup> Jumalalta<sup>76</sup> syntyneet<sup>77</sup> ovat<sup>77</sup>.

<sup>35</sup> Dem. pron. used as pers. pron. (p. 166).      <sup>36</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of root tule, p. 95.      <sup>37</sup> Elative sing. of pron. se.      <sup>38</sup> Elative sing. of nominative valkeus, for use of case, v. p. 144.      <sup>39</sup> Illative of 3rd infin. of verbal stem todista, 1st infin. todistaa, for constr. v. p. 194.      <sup>40</sup> Particle used here with conditional, v. for constr. p. 179.      <sup>41</sup> 3rd pers. plur. conditional of uskos, to believe.      <sup>42</sup> hänen, gen. sing. of 3rd pers. pron. depending upon <sup>43</sup> the postposition kautta with the affix of the 3rd person. Notice that throughout this extract (vv. 10, 12, 14) the genitive of the pers. pron. is used as well as the suffix, v. p. 164.      <sup>44</sup> 3rd sing. impf. negative of olla.      <sup>45</sup> Nominative sing. 3rd pers. pron.      <sup>46</sup> conjunction but.      <sup>47</sup> Nom. sing. of stem totise (p. 35) formed with adjectival ending ise from stem tote, nom. tosi.      <sup>48</sup> 3rd sing. pres. of root valista (1st inf. -taa), to light.      <sup>49</sup> Acc. plur. of stem ihmise, nom. sing. ihminen, man.      <sup>50</sup> Nom. plur. of rel. pron. joka.      <sup>51</sup> maailmaan, illative sing. of maailma, universe (maa, ilma), denoting motion into after tulevat.      <sup>52</sup> 3rd plur. pres. of root tule (1st inf. tulla) to come (p. 95).      <sup>53</sup> Inessive sing.      <sup>54</sup> Nom. sing.      <sup>55</sup> 3rd pers. sing. imperf. negative of tuntea.      <sup>56</sup> Partitive sing. of 3rd pers. pron. after negative verb (p. 127).      <sup>57</sup> Allative plur. of oma, own, with the suffix of the 3rd pers. om-i-lle-nsa.      <sup>58</sup> Negative imperf. of ottaa, to take.      <sup>59</sup> Illative sing. of vasta, meaning literally, what is opposite. The combination ottaa vastaan, is used to mean receive.

7. He came to-bear-witness of-that light, that all might-believe through Him.

8. He was not that light, but He was sent to-bear-witness of-the-light.

9. That was the-true light which lighteth all men who come into-the-world.

10. He was in-the-world, and the-world was made by Him, and the-world knew Him not.

11. He came to-His-own, and His own received Him not.

12. But to-them who received Him, He gave power to-become the-children of-God, who believe on His name,

13. Who were not born of-blood, not of-the-will of-the-flesh, also not of-the-will of-men, but of God.

<sup>60</sup> Nom. plur. of *oma* with suff. of 3rd pers. pron. (p. 57). As *omansa* is subject to the verb, the latter should strictly be *eivät ottaneet*, but *v.* page 123. <sup>61</sup> Allative plur. of *demon*. pron. *se*, nom. plur. *ne*. <sup>62</sup> 3rd pers. plur. imperf. of *ottaa*, *to take*.

<sup>63</sup> 3rd pers. sing. imperf. of *antaa*, *to give*, pres. *annan*. For difference of form in *ottii*, *antoi v.* page 85.

<sup>64</sup> Acc. sing. of *voima*, *power*, formed with suffix *ma* from root *voi* (1st inf. *voida*), *to be able*. <sup>65</sup> Transl. plur. of *laps*, *a child*, *v.* p. 158.

<sup>66</sup> 1st inf. from root *tule*, *to come*, here used as auxiliary meaning *to become or enter on a state*, and taking the translative case. <sup>67</sup> 3rd pers. plur. pres. of *uskoa*, *to believe*.

<sup>68</sup> Genitive sing. of *nimi* (stem *nime*) with pronom. affix of 3rd pers. <sup>69</sup> Allative sing. of *pää*, *a head*, governing the genitive *nimensä*. The local cases of *pää* are used in a variety of metaphorical expressions.

<sup>70</sup> *Eikä* is the negative verb with the adverbial suffix *kä*, *and*; as in verse 11, the singular of the negative verb is used for the plur.; *syntyneet* must be understood with the negative. <sup>71</sup> Elative sing. of *veri* (stem *vere*), *blood*, for use *v.* p. 143. <sup>72</sup> Genitive sing. of *liha*, *flesh*, depending on *tahdosta*.

<sup>73</sup> Elative sing. of *tahto*, *will*, used as a nominal and verbal stem (*tahtos*, *to wish*).

<sup>74</sup> Particle, *also*, connected with *myötä* and *myöten*. <sup>75</sup> Genitive sing. of *mies* (stem *miehe*), *man*, depending on *tahdosta*.

<sup>76</sup> Elative sing. of *Jumala*, *God*. <sup>77</sup> 3rd pers. plur. of the perf. of *syntyä*, *to be born*, composed of auxiliary and nom. plur. of partitive *syntynyt*, *v.* p. 73.

14. Ja<sup>4</sup> sana<sup>3</sup> tuli<sup>78</sup> lihaksi<sup>79</sup> ja<sup>4</sup> asui<sup>80</sup> meidän<sup>81</sup> seassamme<sup>82</sup>  
 (ja<sup>4</sup> me<sup>83</sup> näimme<sup>84</sup> hänen<sup>42</sup> kunniansa<sup>85</sup> niinkuin<sup>86</sup> ainoan<sup>87</sup>  
 Pojan<sup>88</sup> kunnian<sup>89</sup> Isästä<sup>90</sup>) taynnä<sup>91</sup> armoa<sup>92</sup> ja<sup>4</sup> totuutta<sup>93</sup>.

## KALEVALA, XXXVI. 319-346.

320 . Kullervo Kalervon poika  
 Tempasi<sup>1</sup> terävän<sup>2</sup> miekan<sup>3</sup>,  
 Katselevi kääntelevi,  
 Kyselevi tietelevi<sup>4</sup>;  
 Kysyi<sup>5</sup> mieltä<sup>6</sup> miekaltansa<sup>3</sup>  
 Tokko<sup>7</sup> tuon<sup>8</sup> tekisi<sup>9</sup> mieli<sup>6</sup>

<sup>78</sup> For form *v.* No. 36. Here used as auxiliary *became* and followed by translative, *v.* Nos. 65 and 66 above. <sup>79</sup> Translat. sing. of *liha, flesh*.  
<sup>80</sup> 3rd pers. sing. imperf. of *asua, to dwell*. <sup>81</sup> Genitive plur. of 1st pers. pron. depending on postposition *seassamme*. <sup>82</sup> Postposition in inessive following genitive and taking possessive affix of 1st pers. plur., *v.* p. 214. <sup>83</sup> Nom. plur. of 1st pers. pron. <sup>84</sup> 1st pers. plur. imperf. of root *näke* (inf. *nähdä, v.* p. 108), *näke-i-mme* becomes *näimme* by rules 14 and 28. <sup>85</sup> Acc. sing. of *kunnia, glory*, with the pron. affix of 3rd pers. <sup>86</sup> *So as*, compound adverb formed of *miin, instr. plur. of se* and *kuin, instr. plur. of root ku* (nom. *kuka*). <sup>87</sup> Genitive sing. of *ainoa, only*, agreeing with *Pojan*. <sup>88</sup> Genitive sing. of *Poika, son*, for form *v.* rule 28. <sup>89</sup> Accus. sing. of *kunnia, glory*, governing the genitive *ainoan Pojan*. <sup>90</sup> Elative sing. of *Isä, Father*. The elative is no doubt used to prevent the confusion arising from too many genitives and accusatives coming together. <sup>91</sup> Essive sing. of stem *täyte*, in apposition to *sana* (*v.* p. 157. iii). Modern Finnish makes *täytenä*, but here the *e* is dropped and *täytnä* becomes *täyynnä*, cf. *yynnä* for *yhtenä* from *yksi*. In nom. *täyte* forms *täysi* by rule 37.

14. And the-word became flesh, and dwelt in-our-midst (and we saw his glory, as the-glory of-the-only Son of-the-Father) full of-grace and of-truth.

[Kullervo, the hero of Kalevala xxxi-xxxvi, is represented as a child of misfortune, who by no possible means could do good. After a series of crimes and disasters, rivalling the history of Oedipus, he determines to kill himself.]

Kullervo the son of Kalervo

320 Grasped the sharp sword,  
Looked (at it), turned (it),  
Asked, inquired:  
Asked of his sword its mind,  
If it were minded,

<sup>82</sup> Part. sing. of stem *armo*, *grace* or *mercy*; for use of part. after *täynnä* *v.* p. 136.

<sup>83</sup> Part. sing. of stem *totuute* (p. 36), which rejects *e* before *ta* of part.; for formation from root *tote*, *v.* p. 47. iii.

<sup>1</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of stem *tempata*, 1st inf. *temmata*, conjugated like *lupata*, pp. 95 and 101.

<sup>2</sup> Acc. sing. of adj. *terävä*, *sharp*, formed from *terä*, *edge*, with affix *va*.

<sup>3</sup> Acc. sing. of *miekka*, *sword*; *kk* becomes *k* in closed syllable (rule 25); in l. 323, occurs the ablative sing. with affix of 3rd pers. pron.

<sup>4</sup> These four verbs are all formed with the affix *ele* (*v.* p. 111) from the simple forms *katsoa*, *kääntää*, *kysyä*, *tietää*.

The *vi* is the termination of the 3rd. pers. sing. pres. (p. 62).

<sup>5</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *kysyä*, followed by ablative, *to ask of* (p. 154).

<sup>6</sup> Part. sing. of *miele*, nom. *mieli*, genitive *mielen*, etc.; *e* lost before *tä* by rule 17.

<sup>7</sup> Particle, *whether*.

<sup>8</sup> Acc. of demonstr. pron. *tuo*.

<sup>9</sup> 3rd pers. sing. conditional of root *teke*, inf. *tehdä*, of 3rd conjugation. The phrase *mieli tekee* followed by an accusative (here *tuon*) means *his mind drives him to*, or *he has a mind to*. Cf. the first lines of the Kalevala *Mieleni minun tekevi . . . lähteäni laulamahan*, *my mind incites me to begin singing*.

- 325 Syöä<sup>10</sup> syyllistä<sup>11</sup> lihoa,<sup>12</sup>  
 Viallista<sup>13</sup> verta<sup>14</sup> juoa<sup>15</sup>.  
 Miekka<sup>3</sup> mietti<sup>16</sup> miehen<sup>17</sup> mielen<sup>6</sup>.  
 Arvasi<sup>18</sup> uron<sup>19</sup> pakinan<sup>20</sup>,  
 Vastasi<sup>21</sup> sanalla<sup>22</sup> tuolla<sup>3</sup>:  
 330 ' Miks<sup>23</sup> en<sup>24</sup> söisi<sup>24</sup> mielelläni<sup>25</sup>,  
 Söisi<sup>24</sup> syyllistä<sup>11</sup> lihoa<sup>12</sup>,  
 Viallista<sup>13</sup> verta<sup>14</sup> joisi<sup>26</sup> ?  
 Syön<sup>10</sup> lihoa<sup>12</sup> syyttömäksi,<sup>27</sup>  
 Juon<sup>15</sup> verta<sup>14</sup> viattomaksi<sup>28</sup>.'  
 335 Kullervo Kalervon poika,  
 Sinisukka<sup>29</sup> äijön<sup>30</sup> lapsi<sup>31</sup>  
 Pään<sup>32</sup> on<sup>33</sup> peltohon<sup>34</sup> sysäsi<sup>35</sup>,  
 Perän<sup>36</sup> painoi<sup>37</sup> kankahasen<sup>38</sup>,  
 Kären<sup>39</sup> käänti<sup>40</sup> rintahansa<sup>41</sup>,  
 340 Itse<sup>42</sup> iskihe<sup>43</sup> käreille<sup>44</sup>,

<sup>10</sup> = *syödä* (p. 224) 1st inf. of root *syö* (pres indic. *syön*), depending on phrase *mieli tekisi* (p. 188). <sup>11</sup> Part. sing. (object of *syöä*) of

*syöllinen*, *guilty*, formed from *syy*, *cause* or *guilt*, with affix *llise* (p. 47). <sup>12</sup> = *lihaa* (p. 225), part. sing. of *liha*, *flesh*. <sup>13</sup> Part.

sing. of *viallinen*, formed from *vika*, *fault*, like *syöllinen*, *k* lost by rule 28. <sup>14</sup> Part. sing. of *vere* (nom. *veri*); cf. *mieltä* for

form. <sup>15</sup> = *juoda* (p. 224), 1st inf. of *juo*, pres. *juon*. <sup>16</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *mieltä* (2nd conj.) *to think over*, here meaning *understand*. <sup>17</sup> Genitive sing. of stem *miehe* (nom. *mies*). <sup>18</sup> 3rd

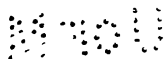
sing. imperf. of *arvata*; pres. indic. *arvaan*, *to think, understand*, conjugated like root *lupata*, p. 101. <sup>19</sup> Genitive sing. of *uro*, *hero*,

which is more usual in the form *uroh* (stem *uroho*, *uroo*). <sup>20</sup> Accusative sing. (object of *arvasi*) of *pakina*, *speech*. <sup>21</sup> *Vastasi*, 3rd sing.

imperf. of *vastata*, conjugated like root *lupata*. <sup>22</sup> Adessive sing. of *sana*, *word*, used here in instrum. signification (p. 152). <sup>23</sup> Transl.

of *mikä*, used adverbially to mean *why* (p. 159). <sup>24</sup> Negative conditional of *syö*, composed of 1st pers. sing. of neg. verb, and stem of conditional (p. 70). By rule 4 *syö* + *isi* becomes *söisi*. <sup>25</sup> Adessive

sing. of *mieli* (v. No. 6) with affix of 1st pers. sing. *with my mind*, i. e.



- 325 To eat guilty flesh,  
To drink sinful blood.  
The sword understood the mind of the man,  
Followed the speech of the hero,  
Answered with this word :
- 330 ' Why should I not eat to my pleasure,  
Eat guilty flesh,  
Drink sinful blood ?  
I eat the flesh of the guiltless,  
I drink the blood of the sinless.'
- 335 Kullervo the son of Kalervo,  
The old man's child with blue stockings,  
Drove the hilt into the ground,  
Fixed the end in the plain,  
Turned the point to his breast
- 340 Himself fell on the point.

*with pleasure.* <sup>26</sup> *Juo + isi* becomes *joisi* (v. No. 15). <sup>27</sup> *ki* is an adverbial affix (p. 118) meaning *even*; *syyttömän* is the genitive sing. of *syytön*, *guiltless* (stem *syyttömä*), a caritive adjective formed from *syy*, with suffix *ttoma*, just as *syyllinen* is formed with suffix *llise* (v. pp. 47 and 37). <sup>28</sup> Genitive sing. of caritive adjective *viaton*, formed from *vika*. <sup>29</sup> *Blue-stockinged*, a compd. of *sini*, *blue*, and *sukka*, *stocking*. <sup>30</sup> Gen. sing. of *äijö* (= *äijä*), *an old man*. <sup>31</sup> Nom. sing. of stem *laps*, *child*. <sup>32</sup> Accusative sing. of *pää*, *head*, here *the hilt of a sword*. <sup>33</sup> Particle of emphasis frequently used in Kalevala, and not the verb substantive. <sup>34</sup> = *peltoon* (p. 225), illative sing. of *pelto*, *field* or *ground*. <sup>35</sup> 3rd pers. sing. of *sysätä*, *to drive*, conj. like *luvata*. <sup>36</sup> Accusative sing. of *perä*, *end*. <sup>37</sup> 3rd pers. sing. impf. of *painaa*, *to force down* or *into*. <sup>38</sup> = *kankaasen* (p. 225), illative sing. of stem *kankaha*, nom. *kangas* (p. 38 and rule 26), *a bare plain*. <sup>39</sup> Accusative sing. of stem *kärke*, nom. *kärki*, here *the point of the sword*. <sup>40</sup> 3rd sing. impf. of *kääntää*, *to turn*, v. p. 16. <sup>41</sup> = *rintaansa*, illative sing. of *rinta*, *breast*, with suffix of 3rd pers. pron. <sup>42</sup> Nominative sing. of pronoun. <sup>43</sup> 3rd pers. sing. reflex. impf. of *iskeys*, *to strike*. For form v. pp. 109 and 227. <sup>44</sup> All. sing. of *kärki* (v. No. 38).

- Siihen <sup>45</sup> surmansa <sup>46</sup> sukesi <sup>47</sup>  
 Kuolemansa <sup>48</sup> kohtaeli <sup>49</sup>.  
 Se oli surma <sup>46</sup> nuoren <sup>50</sup> miehen <sup>17</sup>,  
 Kuolo <sup>51</sup> kullervo-urohon <sup>52</sup>,  
 345 Loppu <sup>53</sup> ainakin <sup>54</sup> urosta <sup>55</sup>  
 Kuolema <sup>56</sup> kova-osaista <sup>57</sup>.

## KALEVALA, XVI. 151 ff.

- Läksi <sup>1</sup> Tuonelta <sup>2</sup> sanoja <sup>3</sup>,  
 Manalalta <sup>4</sup>, mahtiloita <sup>5</sup>;  
 Astua taputtelevi <sup>6</sup>,  
 Kävi <sup>7</sup> viikon <sup>8</sup> vitsikkaa <sup>9</sup>,  
 155 Viikon <sup>8</sup> toisen <sup>10</sup> tuomikkaa <sup>9</sup>,  
 Kolmannen <sup>11</sup> katajikkaa <sup>9</sup>,  
 Jo <sup>12</sup> näkyi <sup>13</sup> Manalan <sup>4</sup> saari <sup>14</sup>,  
 Tuonen <sup>2</sup> kumpu <sup>15</sup> kuumottavi <sup>16</sup>.

<sup>45</sup> Illative sing. of pron. *se*, but here the force of the illative is lost; literally *to this, up till now*. <sup>46</sup> Acc. sing. of *surma, fate*, with pron. aff. of 3rd pers. <sup>47</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of root *suketa*, 1st infin. *sueta, to make, or prepare*, conjugated like *luvata*. <sup>48</sup> Accusative sing. of *kuolema, death* (pp. 45 and 190). <sup>49</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *kohtaella, to meet* (one's fate); cf. *kohtalo, fate*. <sup>50</sup> Genitive sing. of *nuori* (stem *nuore*), *young*. <sup>51</sup> Nominative sing. = *kuolema*, but formed with suffix *o* (p. 45). <sup>52</sup> Compound of proper name *Kullervo* and *uroh, hero* (stem *uroho*). <sup>53</sup> Nominative sing. *end, genitive loppun*; cf. *loppua, to end, intrans., lopettaa trans.* <sup>54</sup> Adv. *aina, always*, with suffix *kin*. *Lönnrot* explains this word as *ätminstone, visst*; it seems here almost pleonastic, and cannot be rendered *for ever*. <sup>55</sup> Partitive sing. of *uroh* (stem *uroho*), *hero*, used here as the genitive; <sup>57</sup> Partitive sing. of compound adj. formed from *kova hard* and *osainen* (stem *-se*) *fated*; adjective of *osa, share*.

<sup>1</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *lähteä* (rule 40); *lähti* is also found. The lit. mean-

Thus he sought his fate,  
Met his death.

This was the fate of the young man,  
The death of the hero Kullervo,  
345 The end of the hero,  
The death of the ill-fated one.

(Väimöinen journeys to the place of the dead to find his lost spells.)

He set out to fetch words from Tuoni  
(Words of) power from Manala;  
Going he stepped firmly,  
Went a week through forests of young trees,  
155 A second week through bird cherries,  
A third week through junipers:  
Already appeared the island of Manala,  
The hill of Tuoni loomed.

ing of this word is *to set out*, but it is used sometimes with an object to mean *to go after, to fetch*. <sup>2</sup> Ablative sing. of *tuoni, death*. *Mana* is a synonym.

<sup>3</sup> Part. plur. of *sana, word* (rule 7), obj. of *läksi*.

<sup>4</sup> Ablative sing. of *Manala, abode of death* (v. p. 47 for the suffix).

<sup>5</sup> Part. plur. of *mahti, power*, obj. of *läksi*; for suffix *loi*, v. p. 225.

<sup>6</sup> For constr. v. p. 188; *astua*, 1st infin., *to step*; *taputtelevi*, 3rd pers.

sing. pres. (p. 228) of *taputella, to tread heavily or firmly*. <sup>7</sup> 3rd

sing. imperf. of *käydä* (rule 5, p. 9), *to go or traverse*. <sup>8</sup> Accusative

sing. of *wiikko, week*, denoting duration (v. p. 137). <sup>9</sup> These three

words are formed with the suffix *kko* (p. 47) from the words *witsa, small tree or shoot*; *tuomi, bird-cherry*, Swedish *hagg*; and *kataja, juniper*.

<sup>10</sup> Accusative sing. of *toinen* (p. 35). <sup>11</sup> Accusative sing. of *kolmas*

(p. 35). <sup>12</sup> Adv. *now or already*. <sup>13</sup> 3rd. sing. imperf. of *näkyä*,

neut. form of *nähdä, to see* (p. 109). <sup>14</sup> Nominative sing. of stem

*saari, an island*. <sup>15</sup> Nominative sing. *a hill*. <sup>16</sup> 3rd sing. pres.

of *kuumottaa, to loom or be seen indistinctly*.



- Vaka<sup>17</sup> vanha<sup>18</sup> Väinämöinen  
 160 Jo<sup>13</sup> huhuta<sup>19</sup> huikahutti<sup>20</sup>  
 Tuossa Tuonelan<sup>21</sup> joessa<sup>22</sup>,  
 Manalan<sup>4</sup> alanteheessa<sup>23</sup>:  
 'Tuo<sup>24</sup> venettä<sup>25</sup> Tuonen<sup>2</sup> tytti<sup>26</sup>,  
 Lauttoa<sup>27</sup> Manalan<sup>4</sup> lapsi<sup>28</sup>,  
 165 Yli<sup>29</sup> salmen<sup>30</sup> saa'akseni<sup>31</sup>,  
 Joen<sup>22</sup> poikki<sup>32</sup> päästäkseni<sup>33</sup>!  
 Lyhykäinen<sup>34</sup> Tuonen<sup>2</sup> tytti<sup>26</sup>,  
 Matala<sup>35</sup> Manalan<sup>4</sup> neiti<sup>36</sup>  
 Tuo oli poukkujen<sup>37</sup> pesiä<sup>38</sup>,  
 170 Rämpähien<sup>39</sup> räimyttäjä<sup>40</sup>  
 Tuonen<sup>2</sup> mustassa<sup>41</sup> joessa<sup>22</sup>,  
 Manalan<sup>4</sup> alusve'essä<sup>42</sup>;  
 Sanan<sup>3</sup> virkki<sup>43</sup>, noin<sup>44</sup> nimesi<sup>45</sup>,  
 Itse lausui<sup>46</sup> ja pakisi<sup>47</sup>:  
 175 'Vene<sup>25</sup> täältä<sup>48</sup> tuotanehe<sup>49</sup>,  
 Kuni<sup>50</sup> syy<sup>51</sup> sanottanehe<sup>52</sup>,

<sup>17</sup> This is a constant epithet of Väinämöinen, meaning literally *firm*, and then used to denote a kind of steady prudence, which is a natural characteristic of the Finns, and (like Scotch caniness) untranslatable, though more frivolous nations might render it by stolid. <sup>18</sup> Adj. *old*, also a constant epithet. <sup>19</sup> 1st infin.; for constr. *v.* p. 188. <sup>20</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of huikahuttaa. Like the last word this is onomatopœic. <sup>21</sup> Genitive sing. of Tuonela, *place of Tuoni* (*v.* p. 47). <sup>22</sup> Inessive sing. of joki, *a river* (rule 28). <sup>23</sup> Inessive sing. of alanne, *lowland* or *depth* (stem alantehe). <sup>24</sup> 2nd sing. imper. of tuoda (p. 80). <sup>25</sup> Part. sing. of vene, *a boat*; stem venehe (cf. terve, p. 39). obj. of tuo. <sup>26</sup> = tyttö, diminutive, nom. sing. <sup>27</sup> = lauttaa (p. 225), part. sing. of lautta, *ship*. <sup>28</sup> Nominative sing. of stem lapsi, *child*. <sup>29</sup> Preposition with gen. (*v.* p. 217) *across*. <sup>30</sup> Genitive sing. of salmi, *creek*, depending on yli (p. 217). <sup>31</sup> = saadakseni, longer form of 1st infin. of root saa (here used intransitively) with suffix of 1st pers. pron. For constr. *v.* p. 185. <sup>32</sup> Postposition (p. 204) governing the genitive joen. <sup>33</sup> Longer form of

The prudent old Wäinämöinen  
 160 , Now shouting cried loudly  
 In the river of Tuoni  
 In the lowland of Manala.  
 'Bring a boat, daughter of Tuoni,  
 A ship, child of Manala,  
 165 For my going over this creek,  
 For my crossing over the river.'  
 The dwarfish daughter of Tuoni,  
 The stunted maiden of Manala,  
 'She was washing dirty linen,  
 170 Beating clothes,  
 In the black river of Tuoni,  
 In the marsh-water<sup>1</sup> of Manala;  
 Spoke a word, thus uttered,  
 Herself talked and conversed:  
 175 'The boat will be brought  
 When the reason shall be told,

<sup>1</sup> The word seems to imply low-lying marshy places.

päästä (root pääse) with suffix of 1st pers. <sup>34</sup> Nominative sing. dimin. adj. from lyhyt (p. 48). <sup>35</sup> Nominative sing. *low, dwarfish*.  
<sup>36</sup> Nominative sing. *a maiden*. <sup>37</sup> Genitive plur. of poukku, *dirty linen*. <sup>38</sup> = pesijä, *washer*, v. p. 196. <sup>39</sup> Genitive plur. of räiväs (stem räpähä), *rag*. <sup>40</sup> Nominative sing. *a beater*; cf. räimätä, *to beat*. <sup>41</sup> Inessive sing. of musta, *black*. <sup>42</sup> Inessive sing. of compound noun alusvesi (p. 34). <sup>43</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. (the form varies between virkki and virkkoi) from virkkaa, *to speak*. <sup>44</sup> Instr. plur. of tuo, *thus*. <sup>45</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of nimetä, *literally to name*. <sup>46</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of lausua, *to call*. <sup>47</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of pakista, *to talk or speak*. <sup>48</sup> Adv. *thence*; abl. of tämä, *this*; täällä, *täältä* are written with two ä's when used adverbially. <sup>49</sup> = tuotaneen, concessive passive of tuoda, *to bear*. The final n of the passive is omitted. For constr. v. pp. 177 and 182. <sup>50</sup> = kun, *when*. <sup>51</sup> Nominative sing. *a cause*.  
<sup>52</sup> Conditional passive of sanoa, *to speak* (= sanottaneen).

- Mi<sup>53</sup> sinun Manalle<sup>2</sup> saattoi<sup>54</sup>  
 Ilman<sup>55</sup> tau'in<sup>56</sup> tappamatta<sup>57</sup>,  
 Ottamatta<sup>58</sup> oivan<sup>59</sup> surman<sup>60</sup>,  
 180 Muun<sup>61</sup> surman<sup>60</sup> musertamatta<sup>62</sup>.  
 Vaka<sup>17</sup> vanha<sup>18</sup> Väinämöinen  
 Sanan<sup>3</sup> virkkoi<sup>43</sup> noin<sup>44</sup> nimesi<sup>45</sup>:  
 'Tuoni<sup>2</sup> minun tänne<sup>63</sup> tuotti<sup>64</sup>,  
 Mana<sup>2</sup> mailtani<sup>65</sup> veteli<sup>66</sup>.'  
 v. 167, 168. } Lyhykäinen Tuonen tytti,  
 } Matala Manalan neiti  
 Tuonpa<sup>67</sup> hän sanoiksi<sup>68</sup> virkki<sup>43</sup>:  
 'Jopa<sup>12</sup> keksin<sup>69</sup> kielastajan<sup>70</sup>!  
 Kunp'<sup>71</sup> on<sup>72</sup> Tuoni<sup>2</sup> tänne<sup>65</sup> toisi<sup>73</sup>,  
 190 Mana mailta<sup>65</sup> siirteleisi<sup>74</sup>,  
 Tuoni toisi<sup>73</sup> tullessansa<sup>75</sup>,  
 Manalainen<sup>76</sup>, matkassansa<sup>77</sup>,  
 Tuonen hattu<sup>78</sup> hartioilla<sup>79</sup>,  
 Manan kintahat<sup>80</sup> käessä<sup>81</sup>;  
 195 Sano<sup>82</sup> totta<sup>83</sup> Väinämöinen,  
 Mi<sup>53</sup> sinun Manalle saattoi<sup>54</sup>?'

<sup>53</sup> = mikä. <sup>54</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *saattaa*, causative form of *saada* (p. 110), to cause to come or bring; for form v. rule 7. <sup>55</sup> Prep. with the abessive (p. 203): used also as adverb. Apparently genitive of *ilma*, air, but connection of meaning is obscure. <sup>56</sup> Abessive of the 3rd infin. of *tappaa*, to kill (p. 193). <sup>57</sup> = taudin, gen. sing. of *tauti*, disease, constr. with *tappamatta* (p. 184). <sup>58</sup> Abessive of 3rd infin. of *ottaa*, to take. <sup>59</sup> Genitive sing. of *oiva*, right or proper. <sup>60</sup> Genitive sing. of *surma*, fate; a right fate is a natural death. For constr. v. p. 184. <sup>61</sup> Genitive sing. of *muu*, other; another fate means one other than a natural death. <sup>62</sup> Abessive of 3rd infin. of *musertaa*, to break. <sup>63</sup> Adv. *hither*, v. p. 24. <sup>64</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. from *tuottaa*, causal of *tuoda*, to bear. <sup>65</sup> Ablative plur. of *maa*, land, with affix of 1st person. <sup>66</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. from *vedellä*, formed from *vetää*, to carry. <sup>67</sup> Accusative sing. of pron. *tu*, with adverbial suffix *pa*. <sup>68</sup> Transl. plur. of *sana* after *virkki*, spoke this into words (p. 158). <sup>69</sup> 1st sing. pres. of *keksiä*, to

- What brought thee to Mana,  
 Without slaying by disease  
 Without taking by a natural death  
 180 Without breaking by another death.<sup>70</sup>  
     The prudent old Wäinämöinen,  
 Spoke a word, thus uttered :  
 'Tuoni brought me hither,  
 Mana brought me from my lands.'  
 185     The dwarfish daughter of death,  
 The stunted maiden of Manala  
 Spoke this in words :  
 'Now I recognize the liar.  
 Had Tuoni brought (thee) hither,  
 190 Mana removed from the earth,  
 Tuoni would have brought (thee) in his coming,  
 Manalainen in his journeying,  
 The hat of death on (thy) head (lit. necks),  
 The gloves of death on (thy) hand<sup>71</sup> ;  
 195 Speak the truth, Wäinämöinen :  
 What brought thee to Manala ?<sup>72</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This is apparently a reference to some kind of costume in which a corpse was dressed.

*find* or *detect*. <sup>70</sup> Accusative sing. of *kielastaja* (from *kieli*, *tongue*). One who is ready with his tongue, hence *a liar*. The Finns are a silent race. <sup>71</sup> *kun*, *if*, with adv. suffix *pa*. <sup>72</sup> *On*, a particle of emphasis, not the verb substantive. <sup>73</sup> 3rd sing. conditional of *tuoda*, *to bring*. <sup>74</sup> 3rd sing. conditional of *siirtellä*, deriv. verb from *siirtää*. <sup>75</sup> Inessive of 2nd infin. of *tulla*, *to come*, with pron. affix of 3rd person. <sup>76</sup> Adjectival form from *Manala* (*v. p. 46*). <sup>77</sup> Inessive of *matka*, *a journey*. <sup>78</sup> Nominative sing. *a hat*. For the constr. of nominative absolute *v. p. 134*. <sup>79</sup> Adessive plur. of *hartia*, *neck* or *shoulders*. <sup>80</sup> Nominative plur. of *kinnas*, *a glove*, stem *kintaha* (*p. 38*). <sup>81</sup> = *kädessä*, inessive of *käsi*, *a hand* (stem *käte*), for use *v. p. 141*. <sup>82</sup> 2nd sing. imper. of *sanoa*, *to speak*. <sup>83</sup> Part. sing. of *tosi*, *truth* (stem *tote*, *v. p. 34*).

- Vaka<sup>17</sup> vanha<sup>18</sup> Väinämöinen  
 Jo<sup>12</sup> tuossa<sup>84</sup> sanoiksi<sup>88</sup> virkki<sup>43</sup>:  
 'Rauta<sup>85</sup> mun<sup>86</sup> Manalle<sup>2</sup> saattoi<sup>84</sup>,  
 200 Teräs<sup>87</sup> tempoi<sup>88</sup> Tuonelahan<sup>21</sup>.'
- v. 167, 168, }  
 173. } Lyhykäinen Tuonen tytti,  
 } Matala Manalan neiti  
 } Sanan virkkoi, noin nimesi:  
 'Tuosta<sup>89</sup> tunnen<sup>90</sup> kielastajan<sup>70</sup>!  
 205 Kun<sup>71</sup> rauta<sup>85</sup> Manalle<sup>2</sup> saisi<sup>91</sup>,  
 Teräs<sup>87</sup> toisi<sup>73</sup> Tuonelahan<sup>21</sup>,  
 Verin<sup>92</sup> vaattehet<sup>93</sup> valuisi<sup>94</sup>,  
 Hurmehin<sup>95</sup> hurahteleisi<sup>96</sup>;  
 v. 195. Sano totta Väinämöinen,  
 210 Sano totta toinen<sup>10</sup> kerta<sup>97</sup>!'
- Vaka<sup>17</sup> vanha<sup>18</sup> Väinämöinen  
 Itse virkki<sup>43</sup>, noin<sup>44</sup> nimesi<sup>45</sup>:  
 'Vesi<sup>98</sup> sai<sup>91</sup> minun Manalle<sup>2</sup>,  
 Aalto<sup>99</sup> toi<sup>73</sup> on<sup>72</sup> Tuonelahan<sup>21</sup>.'
- v. 167, 168, }  
 173. } Lyhykäinen Tuonen tytti,  
 } Matala Manalan neiti  
 } Sanan virkkoi, noin nimesi:  
 'Ymmärrän<sup>100</sup> valehtelian<sup>101</sup>!  
 Jos<sup>102</sup> vesi<sup>92</sup> Manalle<sup>2</sup> saisi<sup>91</sup>,  
 220 Aalto<sup>99</sup> toisi<sup>73</sup> Tuonelahan<sup>21</sup>,  
 Vesin<sup>102</sup> vaattehet<sup>93</sup> valuisi<sup>94</sup>,

<sup>84</sup> Inessive of *tuo*, *there* or *thereupon*. <sup>85</sup> Nominative sing. (gen. *raudan*, *rauan*), *iron*. <sup>86</sup> = *minun*, *me*. <sup>87</sup> Nominative sing. of stem *teräkse*, *steel*. <sup>88</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *tempoa*, cf. *temmata* <sup>89</sup> Elative sing. of *tuo*, *from this*. <sup>90</sup> 1st sing. pres. of *tuntea*. <sup>91</sup> 3rd sing. conditional of *saada*, meaning here *to convey* (cf. reflex. *saapua*). N.B. Pres. cond. used here with past signif. <sup>92</sup> Instr. plur. of *veri* (stem *vere*), *blood*. <sup>93</sup> Nominative plur. of *vaate* (stem *vaattehe*), *garment*. <sup>94</sup> 3rd pers. sing. cond. (though with plur.

- The prudent old Wainämöinen  
 Hereupon spoke in words :  
 'Iron brought me to Mana,  
 200 Steel sped me to Tuonela.'  
 The dwarfish daughter of Tuoni,  
 The stunted child of Manala,  
 Spoke a word, thus uttered :  
 'From this I know the liar !  
 205 If iron had sent (thee) to Mana  
 Steel brought (thee) to Tuonela :  
 (Thy) clothes would drip with blood,  
 Would trickle with gore.  
 Speak the truth, Wainämöinen,  
 210 Speak the truth a second time.'  
 The prudent old Wainämöinen  
 Himself spoke, thus uttered :  
 'Water sent me to Mana,  
 The wave brought (me) to Tuonela.'  
 215 The dwarfish daughter of Tuoni  
 The stunted maiden of Manala,  
 Framed a word, thus uttered :  
 'I detect the liar.  
 If water had sent (thee) to Mana,  
 220 The wave brought (thee) to Tuonela,  
 (Thy) clothes would drip with water

subject) of *valua*, to drip. <sup>95</sup> Instr. plur. of *hurme*, *gore* (stem *hurmehe*). <sup>96</sup> 3rd sing. (for plural) cond. of *hurahdella*. <sup>97</sup> Nom. sing. (gen. *kerran*) *time*; for use of nom. *v.* p. 137. In l. 224 the accusative is used in same constr. <sup>98</sup> Nominative sing. of stem *vete*, p. 34. <sup>99</sup> Nominative sing. (gen. *aallon*), *willow*. <sup>100</sup> 1st pers. sing. pres. of *ymmärtää*, p. 93. <sup>101</sup> Accusative sing. of *valehtelia* (or *valhetelija*), a liar, *v.* No. 129. <sup>102</sup> Conj. *if*.

- Helmasi <sup>108</sup> herahtelesi <sup>104</sup> ;  
 Sano <sup>82</sup> tarkkoja <sup>105</sup> tosia <sup>106</sup>,  
 Mi <sup>63</sup> sinun Manalle <sup>2</sup> saattoi <sup>54</sup> ?'  
 225 Tuossa <sup>84</sup> vanha <sup>17</sup> Väinämöinen  
 Vielä <sup>107</sup> kerran <sup>106</sup> kielastavi <sup>109</sup> :  
 'Tuli <sup>110</sup> toi <sup>73</sup> mun <sup>86</sup> Tuonelahan <sup>21</sup>,  
 Valkea <sup>111</sup> Manalle <sup>2</sup> saattoi <sup>54</sup>.'  
 v. 167, 168, }  
 183. } Lyhykäinen Tuonen tytti,  
 } Matala Manalan neiti  
 } Hänpä tuon sanoiksi virkki :  
 } 'Arvoan <sup>112</sup> valehtelian <sup>101</sup> !  
 } Jos <sup>102</sup> tuli <sup>110</sup> Manalle <sup>2</sup> toisi <sup>73</sup>,  
 } Valkeainen <sup>113</sup> Tuonelahan <sup>21</sup>,  
 235 } Oisi <sup>114</sup> kutrit <sup>115</sup> kärventynnä <sup>116</sup>,  
 } Partaki <sup>117</sup> pahoin <sup>118</sup> palanut <sup>119</sup>.'  
 } 'Oi <sup>120</sup> sie <sup>121</sup> vanha <sup>17</sup> Väinämöinen,  
 } Jos <sup>102</sup> tahot <sup>122</sup> venettä <sup>26</sup> täältä <sup>48</sup>,  
 } Sano <sup>82</sup> tarkkoja <sup>105</sup> tosia <sup>106</sup>,  
 240 } Valehia <sup>123</sup> viimeisiä <sup>124</sup>,  
 } Mitenkä <sup>125</sup> tulit <sup>126</sup> Manalle <sup>2</sup>  
 v. 178-183. } Ilman tau'in tappamatta,  
 } Ottamatta oivan surman,  
 } Muun surman murentamatta <sup>127</sup>.'  
 245 } Sanoi <sup>82</sup> vanha <sup>18</sup> Väinämöinen :

<sup>108</sup> Nominative sing. with affix of 2nd person. <sup>104</sup> 3rd pers. sing. (for plur.) of herahdella, identical with hurahdella above. <sup>105</sup> Part. plur. of tarkka, exact. <sup>106</sup> Part. plur. of stem tote (nom. tosia), truth. <sup>107</sup> Adv. once more. <sup>108</sup> Accusative sing. of kerta, cf. No. 97. <sup>109</sup> 3rd sing. pres. of kielestää, v. No. 70. <sup>110</sup> Nominative sing. of tule, fire. <sup>111</sup> Nominative sing.; has two meanings, (1) white or bright, (2) flame; so here. <sup>112</sup> = arvaan, 1st sing. pres. of arvata, to think or perceive, conjugated like luvata. <sup>113</sup> Adj. from valkea (p. 47), the flaming one, i. e. fire. <sup>114</sup> = olisi, here used for olisivat. <sup>115</sup> Nominative plur. of kutri, a lock. <sup>116</sup> = kärventyneenä, essive sing. of past part. act of

- Thy bosom would flow.  
 Speak the exact truth:  
 What brought thee to Mana?'
- 225        Hereupon the old Wäinämöinen  
 Lied again a time.  
 'Fire brought me to Tuonela,  
 Flame sent me to Mana.'
- 230        The dwarfish daughter of Tuoni,  
 The stunted maiden of Manala,  
 She spoke this in words.  
 'I detect the liar.  
 If fire had brought thee to Mana,  
 Flame to Tuonela,
- 235        (Thy) ringlets would be singed,  
 And (thy) beard be badly burnt.  
 O thou old Wäinämöinen,  
 If thou desirest the boat from here,  
 Speak the exact truth,
- 240        Last lies,  
 Why thou hast come to Mana,  
 Without slaying by disease,  
 Without taking by natural death,  
 Without destroying by another death.'
- 245        Said the old Wäinämöinen:

kärventyä, neuter form of *kärventää*, to burn. <sup>117</sup> Nominative  
 parts, beard (gen. *parran*), with adverbial affix *ki*. <sup>118</sup> Instrum.  
 plur. of *paha*, bad, used adverbially (p. 161). <sup>119</sup> Nominative sing.  
 past part. act. of *palsaa*, to burn (intrans.). <sup>120</sup> An interjection.  
<sup>121</sup> = *sinä*. <sup>122</sup> = *tahdot*, 2nd pers. sing. pres. of *tahtoa*, to wish.  
<sup>123</sup> Part. plur. of *walhe*, a lie (the cases and derivatives of this word are  
 written either *walhe* or *waleh*). <sup>124</sup> Part. plur. of *viimeinen* (stem  
*sen*), last, often employed in indeclinable form *viime*. <sup>125</sup> Adv. fr  
 pron. stem *mi*. <sup>126</sup> 2nd sing. imperf. of *tulla*, to come. <sup>127</sup> Ab-  
 essive of 3rd infin. of *murentaa*, to crush or break.



- ' Jos <sup>102</sup> vähän <sup>128</sup> valehtelinki <sup>129</sup>,  
 Kerran <sup>108</sup> toisen <sup>10</sup> kielastelin <sup>109</sup>,  
 Toki <sup>130</sup> ma <sup>131</sup> sanon <sup>82</sup> toetki <sup>132</sup> :  
 Tein <sup>133</sup> tieolla <sup>134</sup> venettä <sup>25</sup>,  
 210 Laain <sup>135</sup> purtta <sup>136</sup> laulamalla <sup>137</sup>,  
 Lauloin <sup>138</sup> päivän <sup>139</sup>, lauloin toisen <sup>10</sup>,  
 Niin <sup>140</sup> päivällä <sup>139</sup> kolmannella <sup>141</sup>  
 Rikkoihe <sup>142</sup> reki <sup>143</sup> runoilta <sup>144</sup>,  
 Jalas <sup>145</sup> taittui <sup>146</sup> lausehilta <sup>147</sup> ;  
 255 Läksin <sup>1</sup> Tuonelta <sup>2</sup> oroa <sup>148</sup>,  
 Manalalta <sup>4</sup> vääntiätä <sup>149</sup>  
 Rekosen <sup>150</sup> rakentoani <sup>151</sup>,  
 Laulukorjan <sup>152</sup> laatiani <sup>153</sup> ;  
 Tuopa <sup>24</sup> nyt <sup>154</sup> venoista <sup>155</sup> tänne <sup>60</sup>,  
 260 Laita <sup>156</sup> mulle <sup>157</sup> lauttoasi <sup>27</sup>  
 v. 165, 166. { Yli salmen saa'akseni,  
 { Joen poikki päästäkseni !'  
 Kyllä <sup>158</sup> Tuonetar <sup>159</sup> toruvi <sup>160</sup>,  
 Manan <sup>2</sup> neiti <sup>36</sup> riitelevi <sup>161</sup> :

<sup>128</sup> Instr. of *vähä*, *little*, used adverbially.      <sup>129</sup> 1st sing. imperf. of *valehdella*, with suffix *ki*.      <sup>130</sup> Adv. *yet*.      <sup>131</sup> = *minä*.      <sup>132</sup> = *todet*, accusative plur. of stem *tote*, nominative *tosi*, *truth*.      <sup>133</sup> 1st sing. imperf. of *tehdä*, stem *teke*.      <sup>134</sup> = *tiedolla*, adessive sing. of *tieto*, *knowledge*, used instrumentally, *v. p. 152*.      <sup>135</sup> = *laadin*, 1st pers. imperf. of *laatia*, *to fashion*.      <sup>136</sup> Part. sing. of *pursi* (stem *purte*), *ship*; part. is used because action was not completed, *v. p. 127*.      <sup>137</sup> Adessive of 3rd infin. of *laulaa*, *to sing* (*p. 193*).      <sup>138</sup> 1st sing. imperf. of same verb (*p. 85*).      <sup>139</sup> Accusative sing. of *päivä*, *day* (*p. 137*).  
<sup>140</sup> Instr. plur. of *se*, used adverbially.      <sup>141</sup> Adessive sing. of *kolmas* (*p. 35*); the essive would be more usual as a definite date is mentioned (*p. 150*).      <sup>142</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *rikkoa*, *to break* (*v. p. 227*).  
<sup>143</sup> Nominative sing. *sledge* (*p. 33*).      <sup>144</sup> Ablative plur. of *runo*, *verse* (*p. 154*).      <sup>145</sup> Nominative sing. of stem *jalakse* (*fr. jala, foot, the foot or end of a sledge*).      <sup>146</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. from *taittua*, *to bend*, reflex. form of *taittaa* (*p. 109*).      <sup>147</sup> Ablative plur. of *lause* (stem *lausehe*).

'If I lied a little,  
 Told an untruth a second time,  
 Yet (now) I speak the truth:  
 I was making a boat with skill,  
 250 Constructing a ship with singing:  
 I sang a day, I sang a second,  
 Now on the third day  
 The sledge broke from my verses,  
 The foot-piece broke from my speech.  
 255 I set forth to obtain an auger from Tuoni,  
 A gimlet from Manala,  
 For my building the sledge,  
 For my arranging the basket-sledge of song<sup>1</sup>.  
 So bring the boat here,  
 260 Prepare for me thy ship,  
 For my going over this creek,  
 For my crossing over the river.'  
 Greatly Tuonetar was wroth  
 The maiden of Mana was angry:

<sup>1</sup> This passage seems a little confused. Wainämöinen was building a boat by means of magic spells, of whose efficacy so much is said in the Kalevala. During this process he lost (apparently forgot) three words which were necessary. The language in 350 ff. is metaphorical: the sledge of his song was broken, i. e. the spells did not run smoothly.

<sup>148</sup> = *oraa*, part. sing. of *ora*, a *gimlet*.      <sup>149</sup> Part. sing. of *vääntiä*,  
*an auger*.      <sup>150</sup> Accusative sing. of *rekonen*, dim. fr. *reke*, a *sledge*.  
<sup>151</sup> = *rakentaa* (p. 93) 1st infin. with affix of 1st person (p. 137).      <sup>152</sup> Ac-  
 cusative sing. compound word formed from *laulu*, *song*, and *korja*, a  
*basket sledge* (Swedish *korgsläde*).      <sup>153</sup> v. No. 135, 1st infin. with  
 suffix of 1st person.      <sup>154</sup> Adv. *now*.      <sup>155</sup> Part. sing. of *venoinen*,  
*dim.* of *vene*, *boat*.      <sup>156</sup> 2nd sing. imperf. of *laittaa*, *to make ready*.  
<sup>157</sup> = *minulle*.      <sup>158</sup> *kyllä*, adv. *much*; originally a subst. meaning  
*plenty*.      <sup>159</sup> Nominative sing. of *tuonettare*, from stem *tuone*, with  
 affix *ttare* (p. 46).      <sup>160</sup> 3rd sing. pres. of *torua*, *to chide*.      <sup>161</sup> 3rd  
 sing. pres. of *riidella* (stem *riitele*), *to quarrel* or *be angry*.

- 265 ' Oi <sup>190</sup> on <sup>72</sup> hullu <sup>162</sup> hulluuttasi <sup>163</sup>,  
 Mies <sup>164</sup> on <sup>72</sup> mielesi <sup>165</sup> vähyyttä <sup>166</sup> !  
 Tulet <sup>126</sup> syyttä <sup>167</sup> Tuonelahan <sup>21</sup>,  
 Tautta <sup>56</sup> Manan <sup>2</sup> majoille <sup>168</sup> ;  
 Parempi <sup>169</sup> sinun olisi <sup>170</sup>.
- 270 Palata <sup>171</sup> omille <sup>172</sup> maille <sup>173</sup> ;  
 Äijä <sup>174</sup> on tänne <sup>63</sup> tullesia <sup>175</sup>,  
 Ei paljo <sup>176</sup> palannehia <sup>177</sup>,  
 Sanoi vanha Väinämöinen :
- 275 ' Akka <sup>178</sup> tieltä <sup>179</sup> kääntyköhön <sup>180</sup>,  
 Eip' on <sup>72</sup> mies <sup>164</sup> pahempikana <sup>181</sup>,  
 Uros <sup>182</sup> untelompikana <sup>183</sup> ;  
 Tuo <sup>24</sup> venettä <sup>25</sup> Tuonen <sup>2</sup> tytti <sup>26</sup>,  
 Lauttoa <sup>27</sup> Manalan <sup>2</sup> lapsi <sup>28</sup> !'  
 Vei <sup>184</sup> venehen <sup>25</sup> Tuonen <sup>2</sup> tytti <sup>26</sup>,
- 280 Sillä <sup>184</sup> vanhan <sup>18</sup> Väinämöisen  
 Yli <sup>29</sup> salmen <sup>30</sup> saattelevi <sup>185</sup>,  
 Joen <sup>82</sup> poikki <sup>82</sup> päästelevi <sup>185</sup>,  
 Itse tuon <sup>67</sup> sanoiksi <sup>68</sup> virkki <sup>43</sup> :  
 ' Voi <sup>180</sup> sinua Väinämöinen,
- 285 Läksit <sup>1</sup> surmatta <sup>60</sup> Manalle <sup>2</sup>,  
 Kuolematta <sup>186</sup> Tuonelahan <sup>21</sup> !'  
 Tuonetar <sup>169</sup> hyvä <sup>187</sup> emäntä <sup>188</sup>,

<sup>1</sup> Nominative sing., a fool.    <sup>163</sup> Part. sing. with affix of 2nd pers. of stem hulluute, *folly*, derived from hullu (p. 47); for use of part. after oi, v. p. 136.  
<sup>164</sup> Nominative sing. of stem miehe.    <sup>165</sup> Gen. sing. of mieli, with affix of 2nd pers. sing.    <sup>166</sup> Part. sing. of stem vähyyte (after oi), formed like hulluus, above, from vähä, *little*.    <sup>167</sup> Abessive sing. of syy, *cause*; tautta (from tauti) is same case.    <sup>168</sup> Allative sing. (after tulet) from maja, a habitation.    <sup>169</sup> Nominative of stem parempa, comp. of hyvä, *good*.    <sup>170</sup> For constr. v. p. 138.    <sup>171</sup> 1st infin. and root to return, conjugated like luvata.    <sup>172</sup> Adessive plur. of oma, *own*.  
<sup>173</sup> Adessive plur. of maa, *land*.    <sup>174</sup> Adv. and adj. *much*.    <sup>175</sup> Part. plur. of stem tullesia (nominative sing. tullut, p. 40), 2nd part. act. of tulla,

- 265 'Alas, fool, for thy folly,  
 Man, for the smallness of thy sense.  
 Thou comest without a cause to Tuonela,  
 Without sickness to the dwellings of Mana:  
 Better were it for thee
- 270 To return to thy own lands.  
 Many are they who come hither,  
 Not many they who return.'  
 Said the old Wäinämöinen—  
 'Let an old woman turn from the path,
- 275 Not even a worse man,  
 Not a duller hero.  
 Bring the boat, daughter of Tuoni,  
 The ship, child of Manala.'  
 The daughter of Tuoni brought the boat,
- 280 With it the old Wäinämöinen  
 Across the creek she carried.  
 Conveyed over the river.  
 Herself she spoke this in words.  
 'Woe to thee, Wäinämöinen,
- 285 Thou hast come without death to Mana,  
 Without dying to Tuonela.'  
 Tuonetar, the good hostess,

to come. <sup>176</sup> Adv. *much*. <sup>177</sup> v. 175; this is corresponding form from *palata*, to return. <sup>178</sup> Nominative sing., *an old woman*. <sup>179</sup> Ablative sing. *tie, a way*. <sup>180</sup> = *kääntyköön*, 3rd sing. opt. of *kääntyä*, reflex. form of *kääntää*, to turn. <sup>181</sup> Nominative of compar. of *paha*, *bad* (p. 42), with adv. affix *kana*. N.B. As *ei* is indic. and not imper. the line must mean 'the meanest man *will* not.' <sup>182</sup> Nominative sing. stem *uroho* (p. 38). <sup>183</sup> Nominative of compar. of *untelo*, *sleepy* or *dull*, from *untua*, to be *sleepy*. <sup>184</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *viedä* (rule 4). <sup>185</sup> *saatella*, *päästellä* are derivative forms from *saada*, *päästä* (p. 111). <sup>186</sup> Abessive of 3rd infin. of *kuolla*, to die. <sup>187</sup> Nominative sing. *good*. <sup>188</sup> Nominative sing. (gen. *emännän*), *mistress* or *hostess*.

- Manalatar vaimo<sup>189</sup> vanha<sup>18</sup>  
 Toip'<sup>78</sup> on<sup>72</sup> tuopilla<sup>189</sup> olutta<sup>190</sup>,  
 290 Kantoi<sup>191</sup> kaksikorvaisella<sup>192</sup>,  
 v. 283. Itse tuon sanoiksi virkki:  
 'Juop'<sup>193</sup> on<sup>72</sup> vanha<sup>18</sup> Väinämöinen!<sup>1</sup>  
 Vaka<sup>17</sup> vanha<sup>18</sup> Väinämöinen  
 Katsoi<sup>194</sup> pitkin<sup>195</sup> tuoppiansa<sup>189</sup>,  
 295 Sammakot<sup>196</sup> kuti<sup>197</sup> sisällä<sup>198</sup>,  
 Maot<sup>199</sup> laioilla<sup>200</sup> lateli<sup>201</sup>;  
 Siitä<sup>185</sup> tuon<sup>97</sup> sanoiksi<sup>68</sup> virkki<sup>43</sup>:  
 'En mä<sup>131</sup> tänne<sup>65</sup> tullutkana<sup>176</sup>  
 Juomahan<sup>198</sup> Manalan<sup>4</sup> maljat<sup>202</sup>,  
 300 Tuonen<sup>2</sup> tuopit<sup>180</sup> lakkimahan<sup>203</sup>!  
 Juopuvat<sup>204</sup> oluen<sup>199</sup> juojat<sup>205</sup>,  
 Kannun<sup>206</sup> appajat<sup>207</sup> katoovat<sup>208</sup>.  
 Sanoi<sup>182</sup> Tuonelan<sup>28</sup> emäntä<sup>188</sup>:  
 'Oi<sup>120</sup> on<sup>72</sup> vanha<sup>18</sup> Väinämöinen,  
 305 Mitä<sup>209</sup> sie<sup>121</sup> tulit<sup>126</sup> Manalle,  
 Kuta<sup>210</sup> Tuonelan<sup>21</sup> tuville<sup>211</sup>  
 Ennen<sup>212</sup> Tuonen<sup>2</sup> tahtomatta<sup>213</sup>,  
 Manan<sup>2</sup> mailta<sup>214</sup> kutsumatta<sup>215</sup>?'

<sup>189</sup> Adessive sing. of *tuoppi*. The inessive would seem more natural.

<sup>190</sup> Part. sing. of *olut*, *beer*, stem *olue*; cf. *kevät*, p. 39; for part. v. p. 135. <sup>191</sup> 3rd sing. of *kantaa*, *to bear*. <sup>192</sup> Adessive sing.

of *kaksikorvainen*, formed of *kaksi*, *two*; *korva*, *ear*, with adj. ending *inen*, *two-eared* or *two-handed*. <sup>193</sup> 2nd sing. imperf.

of *juoda*, *to drink*. <sup>194</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *katsoa*, *to look*.

<sup>195</sup> Prep. governing partitive *tuoppiansa* (p. 204). <sup>196</sup> Nominative

of *sammakko*, *frog*. <sup>197</sup> 3rd sing. (for plural) imperf. of *kutea*.

<sup>198</sup> Adessive sing. of *sisä*, *interior* (cf. p. 214). <sup>199</sup> = *madot*, nominative plur. of *mato*, *worm*. <sup>200</sup> = *laidoilla*, adessive plur. of *laita*, *side*.

<sup>201</sup> = *mateli* (which perhaps should be read), imperf. of *madella* (sing. for plur.), *to creep* (connected *mato*). <sup>202</sup> Accusative plur. of *malja*, *a cup*.

<sup>203</sup> Illative of 3rd infin. of *lakkia*. For the construction of this and of *juomahan*, v. p. 192. <sup>204</sup> 3rd pers. plur. pres. of *juopua*

Manalatar the old woman <sup>1</sup>  
 Brought beer in a cup,  
 290 Bore (it) in a two-handled vessel.  
 Herself framed this in words:  
 'Drink old Wäinämöinen.'  
 Prudent old Wäinämöinen  
 Looked up and down over his cup.  
 295 Frogs were wriggling in the inside,  
 Worms crawled at the edges.  
 Then he framed this in words:  
 'I came not here at all  
 To drink the pots of Manala,  
 300 To empty the cups of Tuoni.  
 The drinkers of beer get drunk,  
 The drainers of the cup fall.'  
 The hostess of Tuonela said:  
 'O old Wäinämöinen,  
 305 Why hast thou come to Mana,  
 To the dwellings of Tuonela  
 Before the bidding of Tuoni,  
 The calling of Mana from the earth?'

<sup>1</sup> It would seem that this is not the same personage as the 'dwarfish daughter of Tuoni' (also called Tuonetar in 263). But who this new character is, is not explained.

(p. III). <sup>205</sup> Nominative plur. of *juoja* (p. 45). <sup>206</sup> Genitive sing. of *kannu*, a cup, or can. <sup>207</sup> Nominative plur. of *appaja*, formed from *appaa*, to eat or drink greedily. <sup>208</sup> 3rd plur. pres. of stem *katota*, 1st infin. *kadota*, conjugated like *koota* (p. 104). <sup>209</sup> Part. of *mitä*, used adverbially, why. <sup>210</sup> Part. of *kuka*, here used like *mikä*. <sup>211</sup> Allative plur. (after *tullit*) of *tupa*, house. <sup>212</sup> Adv. before. <sup>213</sup> Abessive of 3rd infin. of *tahtoa*, to wish. There is here a confusion of two ideas, without the will of Tuoni and before the bidding of Tuoni. <sup>214</sup> Ablative plur. of *maa*, land. <sup>215</sup> Abessive of 3rd infin. of *kutsua*, to call.

- Sanoi <sup>128</sup> vanha <sup>18</sup> Väinämöinen :  
 310 ' Veistäessäni <sup>216</sup> venoista <sup>185</sup> ;  
 Uutta <sup>217</sup> purtta <sup>188</sup> puuhatussa <sup>218</sup>  
 Uuvuin <sup>219</sup> kolmea <sup>220</sup> sanoja <sup>3</sup>  
 Peripäätä <sup>221</sup> päätellessä <sup>223</sup> ;  
 Kokkoa <sup>223</sup> kohottaessa <sup>224</sup> ;  
 315 Kun <sup>60</sup> en <sup>225</sup> noita <sup>226</sup> saanutkana <sup>225</sup> ,  
 Mailta <sup>214</sup> ilmoilta <sup>227</sup> tavannut <sup>228</sup> ,  
 Piti <sup>229</sup> tulla <sup>126</sup> Tuonelahan <sup>21</sup> ,  
 Lähteä <sup>1</sup> Manan <sup>2</sup> majoille <sup>168</sup>  
 Saamahan <sup>230</sup> sanoja <sup>3</sup> noita <sup>226</sup> ,  
 320 Ongelmoita <sup>231</sup> oppimahan <sup>232</sup> .  
 Tuopa <sup>67</sup> Tuonelan <sup>21</sup> emäntä <sup>168</sup>  
 Sanan <sup>3</sup> virkkoi <sup>43</sup> , noin <sup>44</sup> nimesi <sup>45</sup> :  
 ' Ei <sup>233</sup> Tuoni <sup>2</sup> sanoja <sup>3</sup> anna <sup>233</sup> ,  
 Mana mahtia <sup>5</sup> jakele <sup>234</sup> ,  
 325 Etkä <sup>235</sup> täältä <sup>48</sup> pääsnekänä <sup>235</sup>  
 Sinä <sup>236</sup> ilmoisna <sup>237</sup> ikänä <sup>238</sup>  
 Kotihisi <sup>239</sup> kulkemahan <sup>240</sup> ,  
 Maillesi <sup>241</sup> matelemahan <sup>242</sup> .

<sup>216</sup> Inessive of 2nd infin. of *veistää*, to cut, from *veitsi*, a knife, v. p. 189.

<sup>217</sup> Part. sing. of *uusi* (stem *uute*), new; part. because action was not complete.

<sup>218</sup> Inessive of 2nd infin. of *puuhata*, like *luvata*.

<sup>219</sup> 1st pers. sing. of *uupua*, to fall asleep, to lose; cf. No. 243.

<sup>220</sup> Part. of *kolme*, three, followed by part. sing. of *sana* (p. 172).

<sup>221</sup> = *peräpää*, lit. end-head, i. e. extreme part.

<sup>222</sup> Inessive of 2nd infin. of *päätellä*, derived from *päättää*, to finish.

<sup>223</sup> = *kokkaa*, part. sing. of *kokka*, prow.

<sup>224</sup> Inessive of 2nd infin. of *kohottaa*, transitive form of *kohota*, to swell or rise.

<sup>225</sup> 1st sing. imperf. neg. of *saada*, with adv. affix *kana*.

<sup>226</sup> Part. plur. of *tuota* used after negative.

<sup>227</sup> Ablative plur. of *ilma*, air. *maailma* (*earth*, *air*) means *universe*, and the present expression, in which the two elements are declined, has much the same force.

<sup>228</sup> Nominative sing. 2nd part. active of *tavata* (root *tapata*), conjugated like *luvata*; *en* must be understood with this participle.

<sup>229</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *pitää* (here im-

- Old Väinämöinen said:  
 310 'In my hewing a boat,  
 In fashioning a new ship,  
 I lost three words,  
 In finishing the end-piece,  
 In building up a structure of wood.  
 315 Since I have not found them,  
 Or met in the wide world,  
 It was necessary to come to Tuonela,  
 To set out for the habitations of Mana,  
 In order to find those words,  
 320 To learn dark sayings.'  
 The hostess of Tuoni,  
 Spoke a word, thus uttered:  
 'Tuoni does not give words,  
 (Nor) Mana distribute (words of) power,  
 325 And thou wilt not get free from here  
 In all this life  
 To go to thy home,  
 To return to thy land.'

personal, *oportere*).

<sup>230</sup> Illative of 3rd infin. of *saada*. N.B. This infin. does not depend on *piti*, but denotes the purpose of the action; v. p. 192.

<sup>231</sup> Part. plur. of *ongelmo* (derived from *onki*), a crooked saying, a riddle.

<sup>232</sup> Illative of 3rd infin. of *oppia*, to learn.

<sup>233</sup> 3rd. sing. pres. neg. of *antaa*, to give (p. 69). <sup>234</sup> Negative form (understand *ei*) of *jaella*, derived from *jakaa*, to divide or distribute.

<sup>235</sup> 2nd pers. sing. concessive negative of *päästä* (like *nousta*).

<sup>236</sup> Essive of *se*. <sup>237</sup> Essive sing. of *ilmainen*, derived from *ilma* (the open space or air) and apparently meaning *long*.

<sup>238</sup> Essive of *ikä*, life. For temporal meaning of essive, v. p. 157. The whole expression apparently means *in this long life*, i. e. *as long as you live*.

<sup>239</sup> Illative plur. of *koti*, home, with affix of 2nd pers. pron. <sup>240</sup> Illative of 3rd infin. of *kulkea*, to go.

<sup>241</sup> Allative plur. of *maa*, land, with affix of 2nd pers. <sup>242</sup> Illative of 3rd infin. of *madella*.



- Uuvutti<sup>243</sup> unehen<sup>244</sup> miehen<sup>164</sup>,  
 330 Pani<sup>245</sup> maata<sup>246</sup> matkalaisen<sup>247</sup>  
 Tuonen<sup>2</sup> taljavuotehelle<sup>248</sup>;  
 Siinä mies<sup>164</sup> makaelevi<sup>249</sup>,  
 Uros<sup>182</sup> unta<sup>250</sup> ottelevi<sup>251</sup>,  
 Mies<sup>164</sup> makasi<sup>246</sup>, vaate<sup>98</sup> valvoi<sup>251<sup>a</sup></sup>.  
 335 Oli akka<sup>178</sup> Tuonelassa<sup>21</sup>,  
 Akka<sup>178</sup> vanha<sup>18</sup> käykkäleuka<sup>251<sup>b</sup></sup>,  
 Rautarihman<sup>251<sup>c</sup></sup> kehreäjä<sup>251<sup>d</sup></sup>,  
 Vaskilankojen<sup>251<sup>e</sup></sup> valaja<sup>252</sup>,  
 Kehräsi<sup>251<sup>a</sup></sup> sataisen<sup>253</sup> nuotan<sup>254</sup>,  
 340 Tuhantisen<sup>255</sup> tuuritteli<sup>256</sup>  
 Yönä<sup>257</sup> yhtenä<sup>258</sup> kesäisnä<sup>259</sup>,  
 Yhellä<sup>260</sup> vesikivellä<sup>261</sup>.  
 Oli ukko<sup>262</sup> Tuonelassa<sup>21</sup>,  
 Se on ukko<sup>263</sup> kolmisormi<sup>263</sup>,  
 345 Rautaverkkojen<sup>264</sup> kutoja<sup>265</sup>,  
 Vaskinuotan<sup>266</sup> valmistaja<sup>267</sup>,  
 Se kutoi<sup>268</sup> sataisen<sup>263</sup> nuotan<sup>254</sup>,  
 Tuhantisen<sup>265</sup> tuikutteli<sup>269</sup>

<sup>243</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *uuvuttaa*, to *tire* or *throw to sleep*. <sup>244</sup> = *uneen*, illative sing. of *uni*, *sleep*; the illative is used on account of the idea of change of state in *uuvutti*. <sup>245</sup> 3rd sing. imp. of *panna* (like *tulla*), to *put*. <sup>246</sup> 1st infin. of root *makata* (like *lupata*), to *sleep*. The expression *panna maata* is generally used in an intransitive sense, to *go to bed*. <sup>247</sup> Acc. sing. of *matkalainen*, a *traveller*, deriv. from *matka*, *journey*. <sup>248</sup> Allative sing. (on account of motion in lying down *unto*) of compound noun composed of *talja* and *vuode*, both meaning *skin* or *fur*. <sup>249</sup> 3rd sing. pres. of *makaella*, derivative verb from *maata*. <sup>250</sup> Part. sing. of *uni*. <sup>251</sup> Derivative verb from *ottaa*, to *take*. <sup>251<sup>a</sup></sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *valvoa*, to *watch*. The expression is a proverb, and means *he slept with one eye open*. <sup>251<sup>b</sup></sup> Nominative sing. of compound adj. formed of *käykkä*, *prominent*, and *leuka*, *chin*. <sup>251<sup>c</sup></sup> Genitive sing. of compound substantive formed of *rauta*, *iron*, and *rihma*, *thread*. <sup>251<sup>d</sup></sup> Noun of agency formed with affix *ja* from *kehrätä*, to *spin*. <sup>251<sup>e</sup></sup> Genitive plur.

- 330 She made the man sink into slumber,  
Laid the traveller to sleep,  
On to the skin rugs of Tuoni.  
Then the man slept,  
The hero took slumber,  
The man slept, the clothes watched.
- 335 There was a hag in Tuonela,  
An old hag with a sharp chin,  
A spinner of iron threads,  
A easter of brass threads.  
She spun a hundred fold net,  
340 Wrought one of a thousand fold  
In one summer night  
On one water-stone.  
There was an old man in Tuonela,  
He is an old man with three fingers,
- 345 A weaver of iron nets,  
A preparer of brass nets.  
He wove a hundred-fold net,  
Forged one of a thousand-fold

of *vaskilanka*, compound of *vaski*, *brass*, and *lanka*, *twine*. <sup>252</sup> Noun of agency from *valaa*, *to pour or make by casting*. <sup>253</sup> Accusative sing. of *satainen*, *hundred-fold*, here meaning *complicated or large*.  
<sup>254</sup> Accusative sing. of *nuotta*, *a large net*. <sup>255</sup> Accusative sing. of *tuhantinen*; *v. satainen*, *above*. <sup>256</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *tuuritella*, *to knit* (from *tuurittaa*). <sup>257</sup> Essive sing. of *yö*, *night* (p. 157).  
<sup>258</sup> Essive sing. of *yksi*. <sup>259</sup> Essive sing. of *kesäinen*, *adj. from kesä*, *summer*; *kesäisenä*, contracted to *kesäisnä*. <sup>260</sup> =  *yhdellä* (p. 51). <sup>261</sup> Adessive sing. of compound subst. formed of *vesi*, *water*, and *kivi*, *stone*. <sup>262</sup> Nominative sing. *an old man*. <sup>263</sup> Nominative sing. compound of *kolme*, *three* (N.B. in compounds the *e* becomes *i*), and *sormi*, *a finger*. <sup>264</sup> Genitive plur. of *rautaverkko*, compound of *rauta*, *iron*, and *verkko*, *a net*. <sup>265</sup> Noun of agency from *kutoa*, *to weave*. <sup>266</sup> Genitive sing. of *vaskinuotta*; *v. Nos. 251 and 254*.  
<sup>267</sup> Noun of agency from *valmistaa*, *to make ready*. <sup>268</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *kutoa*. <sup>269</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *tuikutella*.

- Samana <sup>270</sup> kesäisnä <sup>259</sup> yönä <sup>257</sup>,  
 350 Samalla <sup>270</sup> vesikivellä <sup>261</sup>.  
 Tuonen <sup>2</sup> poika <sup>271</sup> koukkusormi <sup>272</sup>,  
 Koukkusormi <sup>272</sup>, rautanäppi <sup>273</sup>,  
 Se veti <sup>274</sup> sataisen <sup>253</sup> nuotan <sup>254</sup>  
 Poikki <sup>32</sup> Tuonelan <sup>21</sup> joesta <sup>275</sup>,  
 355 Sekä <sup>276</sup> poikki <sup>32</sup>, jotta <sup>276</sup> pitkin <sup>190</sup>,  
 Jotta <sup>276</sup> vieläki <sup>107</sup> vitahan <sup>277</sup>,  
 Jott' <sup>276</sup> ei päästä <sup>278</sup> Väinämöisen,  
 Selvitä <sup>279</sup> Uvantolaisen  
 Sina <sup>236</sup> ilmoisna <sup>237</sup> ikänä <sup>238</sup>,  
 360 Kuuna <sup>280</sup> kullan <sup>281</sup> valkeana <sup>282</sup>  
 Tuolta <sup>67</sup> Tuonelan <sup>21</sup> koista <sup>283</sup>,  
 Manalan <sup>4</sup> ikimajoista <sup>284</sup>.  
 Vaka <sup>17</sup> vanha <sup>18</sup> Väinämöinen  
 v. 173. Sanan virkkoi, noin nimesi:  
 365 'Joko <sup>12</sup> lie <sup>285</sup> tuhoni <sup>286</sup> tullut <sup>285</sup>,  
 Hätäpäivä <sup>287</sup> päälle <sup>288</sup> pääsnyt <sup>285</sup>  
 Näillä Tuonelan <sup>21</sup> tuvilla <sup>211</sup>,  
 Manalan <sup>4</sup> majantehilla <sup>289</sup> ?'  
 Pian <sup>290</sup> muuksi <sup>291</sup> muuttelihe <sup>292</sup>,

<sup>270</sup> Essive of sama, *the same*.    <sup>271</sup> Nominative sing. (gen. pojan), *a boy*.  
<sup>272</sup> Compound adj. koukku, *a hook*, sormi, *a finger*.    <sup>273</sup> Compound  
 adj. rauta, *iron*, näppi, *finger tip*.    <sup>274</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of vetää, *to*  
*draw or spread*.    <sup>275</sup> Elative sing. of joki, *river*; alatse, läpi, poikki,  
 yli, sometimes take the elative instead of partitive in the Kalevala.  
<sup>276</sup> sekä . . . jotta = *both . . . and*, but the third jotta introduces a final  
 sentence with the verb in the indicative, not in the subjunctive, as  
 is more usual.    <sup>277</sup> Illative sing. of vita, *crosswise*.    <sup>278</sup> Nega-  
 tive pres. of päästää, *to let go*.    <sup>279</sup> Negative pres. of selvittää,  
*to liberate* (from selvä, *free or clear*).    <sup>280</sup> Essive of kuu, *moon*.  
<sup>281</sup> Genitive sing. of kulta, *gold*.    <sup>282</sup> Essive of walkea, *bright*. The  
 meaning of these three words is clearly *as long as the moon shines*, but  
 their exact relation to each other is a little obscure. Kullan is apparently<sup>3</sup>

- In the same summer night  
 350 On the same water stone.  
     Tuoni's son with crooked fingers,  
     With crooked fingers, with iron nails,  
     He spread the hundred fold net  
     Across the river of Tuoni,  
 355 Both across and along,  
     And also slantwise,  
     That it might not let pass Wainämöinen  
     (Or) free Uvantolainen,  
     In all this life,  
 360 While the golden moon shines,  
     From there, from the homes of Tuoni,  
     From the eternal dwellings of Mana.  
     Prudent old Wainämöinen  
     Spoke a word, thus uttered:  
 365 'Can my doom have already come,  
     The day of misfortune have lighted on my head,  
     In these dwellings of Tuonela,  
     In the abodes of Manala.'  
     Suddenly he changed himself to another shape,

an attributive genitive belonging to *kuun*, and the essive is to be taken in a temporal sense. Literally, *in the moon of gold shining*. Cf. XLIX. 116. *Päivä-kullan paistamahan*.<sup>283</sup> Elative plur. of *koti*, *home*.<sup>284</sup> Elative plur. of *ikimaja*, compound of *iki*, *always*, and *maja*, *dwelling*.<sup>285</sup> Compound concessive of *tulla*; *lie=lienee*. For use of the concessive in questions, *v. p. 177*.<sup>286</sup> Nominative sing. with affix of 1st person.<sup>287</sup> Compound of *hätä*, *straits* or *danger*, and *päivä*, *day*.<sup>288</sup> Allative sing. of *pää*, *head*.<sup>289</sup> Adessive plur. of *majanne* (stem *-tehe*) formed from *maja* (p. 47), *a poor dwelling*.<sup>290</sup> Genitive of *pika*, *swiftness*, used adverbially.<sup>291</sup> Translative sing. of *muu*, *other*; for use of the case here and in *toiseksi* after verbs denoting change (*v. p. 158*).<sup>292</sup> 3rd pers. sing. imperf. (*v. p. 109*) of *muutella*, derived from *muuttaa*, *to make other* (*muu*), or *change*.

- 370 Ruton <sup>293</sup> toiseksi <sup>10</sup> rupeksi <sup>294</sup>,  
 Meni <sup>295</sup> mustana <sup>41</sup> merehen <sup>296</sup>,  
 Sarvana <sup>297</sup> saraikkohon <sup>298</sup>,  
 Matoi <sup>299</sup> rautaisna <sup>300</sup> matona <sup>197</sup>,  
 Kulki <sup>240</sup> kyisnä <sup>301</sup> käärmeheä <sup>302</sup>
- 375 Poikki <sup>32</sup> Tuonelan <sup>21</sup> joesta <sup>275</sup>,  
 Läpi <sup>303</sup> Tuonen <sup>2</sup> verkkoloista <sup>304</sup>.  
 Tuonen <sup>2</sup> poika <sup>271</sup> koukkusormi <sup>272</sup>,  
 Koukkusormi <sup>272</sup>, rautanäppi <sup>273</sup>,  
 Kävi <sup>7</sup> aamulla <sup>305</sup> varahin <sup>306</sup>
- 380 Verkkojansa <sup>304</sup> katsomahan <sup>193</sup>,  
 Sa'an <sup>307</sup> saapi <sup>308</sup> taimenia <sup>309</sup>,  
 Tuhat <sup>310</sup> emon alvehia <sup>311</sup>,  
 Eip' <sup>308</sup> on <sup>72</sup> saanut <sup>308</sup> Väinämöistä <sup>312</sup>,  
 Ukkoa <sup>262</sup> Uvantolaista <sup>312</sup>.

<sup>293</sup> Genitive of *rutto*, *rapid*, used adverbially.      <sup>294</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *ruveta*, *to begin or become*.  
<sup>295</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *mennä*, *to go*.  
<sup>296</sup> Illative of *meri*, *sea*.      <sup>297</sup> Essive of *sarva* (or *saarva*), *an otter*. For the case of this and *mustana*, etc., v. p. 157.      <sup>298</sup> Illative sing. of *saraikko*, formed from *sara*, *sedge*; cf. No. 9.      <sup>299</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *matoa*, *to creep*.  
<sup>300</sup> Essive sing. of *rautainen*, *iron*.      <sup>301</sup> Essive of *kyinen* (stem *se*) adj. from *kyy*, *a viper*.      <sup>302</sup> Essive of *käärme* (stem *käärmehe*), *a serpent*.  
<sup>303</sup> Preposition with elat. v. No. 28c.

- 370      Swiftly he became other,  
           Went black into the water,  
           As an otter into the reedy place,  
           Crept like an iron worm,  
           Moved like a viper snake  
 375      Across the river of Tuonela,  
           Through the nets of Tuoni.  
           Tuoni's son with crooked fingers,  
           With crooked fingers and iron nails,  
           Went in the morning early.  
 380      To look at his nets,  
           Catches a hundred small fish  
           A thousand fry,  
           Did not catch Väinämöinen  
           The old Uvantolainen.

<sup>304</sup> Part. plur. of *verkko*, *net*; cf. No. 5.      <sup>305</sup> Adessive of *aamu*,  
*morning* (p. 150).      <sup>306</sup> = *varhain*, adv. *early*.      <sup>307</sup> = *sadan*, accu-  
sative of *sata*, *hundred*.      <sup>308</sup> 3rd sing. pres. of *saa*.      <sup>309</sup> Part.  
plur. of *taimen* (stem *taimene*), a kind of fish (*salmo fario* or *trutta*,  
Lönnrot).      <sup>310</sup> a thousand, p. 52.      <sup>311</sup> *Emon* is gen. of *emo*  
(= *emä*), *mother*; *alvehia*, part. plur. of *alve* (stem *alpehe*, a young  
fish). The phrase seems to mean *fry that follow their mother*.      <sup>312</sup> Part.  
cases of *Väinämöinen* and *Uvantolainen*, after negative verb.

## KALEVALA XL. 113 ff.

[While Väinämöinen, Lemminkäinen, and Ilmarinen are sailing to Pohjola, the ship goes aground. Väinämöinen asks Lemminkäinen to find out what is the matter.]

- Se on <sup>72</sup> lieto <sup>313</sup> Lemminkäinen <sup>314</sup>  
 Pyörähtihe <sup>315</sup> katsomahan <sup>198</sup>,  
 115 Katsovi <sup>198</sup> venosen <sup>155</sup> alle <sup>316</sup>,  
 v. xvi. 182. Sanan virkkoi, noin nimesi :  
 'Ei ole veno <sup>155</sup> kivellä <sup>261</sup>,  
 Ei kivellä, ei haolla <sup>317</sup>,  
 Vene <sup>25</sup> on hauin <sup>318</sup> hartioilla <sup>70</sup>,  
 120 Ve'en <sup>98</sup> koiran <sup>319</sup> konkkaluilla <sup>320</sup>.  
 v. xvi. 151. } Vaka vanha Väinämöinen  
 182. } Sanan virkkoi, noin nimesi :  
 'Jotaki <sup>321</sup> joessa <sup>22</sup> onpi <sup>322</sup>,  
 Hakojaki <sup>323</sup>, haukiaki <sup>318</sup> ;  
 125 Kun <sup>50</sup> lie <sup>285</sup> hauin <sup>318</sup> hartioilla <sup>79</sup>,  
 v. l. 120. Ve'en koiran konkkaluilla,  
 Veä <sup>324</sup> miekalla <sup>325</sup> vetehen <sup>98</sup>,  
 Katkaise <sup>326</sup> kala <sup>327</sup> kaheksi <sup>328</sup> !'  
 v. l. 113. Se on lieto Lemminkäinen,

<sup>313</sup> Nominative sing. adj. originally *muddy*; thence *soft* or *light*; explained as meaning here *kevytmielinen*, *light-minded*. <sup>314</sup> Also called *Ahti* and *Kaukomieli*. The most fascinating and adventurous of the heroes of the Kalevala, but sadly deficient in moral sense. He was much attached to female society, which led to his being killed, apparently very thoroughly, in book xiv., but in xv. his mother resuscitates him; he did not, however, learn wisdom. Books xxvi. and xxvii. recount his struggle with the people of Pohjola, with whom he was on bad terms owing to his not being invited to the marriage of Ilmarinen, and in xxix. he had to fly to Saari, whence however he was expelled (owing to his light conduct with a thousand brides and a hundred widows), and has further adventures in xxx. In the

## THE INVENTION OF THE HARP.

The gay Lemminkäinen  
 Turned himself to see,  
 115 Looked under the boat,  
 Spoke a word, thus spoke :  
 'The boat is not on a stone,  
 Not on a stone, not on timber,  
 The boat is on the neck of a pike,  
 120 On the hip bones of a water dog.'  
 The prudent old Väinämöinen,  
 Spoke a word, thus said :  
 'There are all sorts of things in a river,  
 Timber, pikes :  
 125 If it be on the neck of a pike,  
 On the hips of a water-dog,  
 Smite with the sword into the water,  
 Cut the fish in two.'  
 The gay Lemminkäinen,

rest of the Kalevala he plays rather a secondary part. <sup>315</sup> 3rd pers. sing. imperf. (p. 227) from *pyörähtää*, to turn (*pyörä*, wheel or circle).  
<sup>316</sup> Postposition governing *venosen*; the allative is used because motion is implied.  
<sup>317</sup> Adessive sing. of *hako*, timber floating in water.  
<sup>318</sup> Genitive sing. of *hauki*, pike. <sup>319</sup> Genitive sing. of *koira*, dog.  
<sup>320</sup> Adessive plur. of *konkka-luu*, compound noun. <sup>321</sup> Part. plur. of *joki*, various. <sup>322</sup> = on. <sup>323</sup> Part. plur. of *hako*, v. 317.  
<sup>324</sup> = *vedä*, 2nd pers. sing. imperat. of *vetää*, to draw. <sup>325</sup> Adessive (p. 152) sing. of *miekka*, sword. <sup>326</sup> 2nd sing. imperf. of *katkaista*, to break or sever, stem *katkaise*. <sup>327</sup> Nominative sing. a fish, direct object of *katkaise* (p. 128). <sup>328</sup> = *kahdeksi*, trans. of *kaksi*, two (for case, v. p. 158).



- 130 Poika<sup>271</sup> veitikka<sup>329</sup> verevä<sup>330</sup>  
 Miekan<sup>326</sup> vyöltänsä<sup>331</sup> vetävi<sup>324</sup>,  
 Luunpurian<sup>332</sup> puoleltansa<sup>333</sup>;  
 Vetä<sup>324</sup> miekalla<sup>325</sup> meryttä<sup>334</sup>,  
 Alta<sup>335</sup> laian<sup>198</sup> laskettavi<sup>336</sup>,  
 135 Itse vierähti<sup>337</sup> vetehen<sup>98</sup>,  
 Kourin<sup>338</sup> aaltohon<sup>99</sup> kohahti<sup>339</sup>.  
 Siitä<sup>340</sup> seppo<sup>341</sup> Ilmarinen<sup>342</sup>  
 Tarttui<sup>343</sup> tukkahan<sup>344</sup> urosta<sup>345</sup>,  
 Nostalti<sup>346</sup> merestä<sup>295</sup> miehen<sup>164</sup>,  
 v. xvi. 283. Itse tuon sanoiksi virkki :  
 'Kaikki<sup>347</sup> on mieheksi<sup>164</sup> kyhätty<sup>348</sup>,  
 Pantu<sup>345</sup> parran<sup>117</sup> kantajaksi<sup>191</sup>,  
 Lisäksi<sup>349</sup> satalu'ulle<sup>350</sup>,  
 Tuhannelle<sup>351</sup> täytteheksi<sup>352</sup>.  
 v. line 131. Miekan vyöltänsä vetävi,  
 Tupestanta<sup>353</sup> tuiman<sup>354</sup> rauan<sup>85</sup>,  
 Jolla<sup>355</sup> kalhaisi<sup>356</sup> kaloa<sup>327</sup>,

<sup>329</sup> Nominative sing. adj. *merry*. <sup>330</sup> Adj. formed from stem *vere*, *blood*, with suffix *va* (p. 48), *vigorous* or *youthful*. <sup>331</sup> Ablative sing. of *vyö*, *a girdle*, with affix of 3rd pers. <sup>332</sup> Acc. sing. of compound subst. with first member (*luu*, *bone*) in gen. and second noun of agency, formed from *purra*, *to bite*. <sup>333</sup> Ablative sing. of *puoli*, *side*, with affix of 3rd pers. <sup>334</sup> Part. sing. of *meryt* (stem *merye*), dimin. of *meri*, *sea*. <sup>335</sup> Preposition governing *laian*, though generally a postposition. <sup>336</sup> 3rd sing. pres. of *laskettaa* (trans. form of *laskea*), *to smite*. <sup>337</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *vierähtää*, deriv. verb (p. 112) from *vierrä*, *to roll down*. <sup>338</sup> Instr. plur. of *koura*, *palm of the hand*. <sup>339</sup> 3rd pers. imperf. of *kohahtaa*, onomatopoeic verb representing noise of bubbling water. <sup>340</sup> Elative sing. of *se*, used adverbially, *then*. <sup>341</sup> *seppo* or *seppä*, nominative sing. *a smith*. <sup>342</sup> The magic smith of Kalevala and forger of the Sampo; after many trials he married the maiden of Pohja (xix.), and the marriage is described in xx-xxv., but in xxxiii. she is killed. Ilmarinen then forged himself a wife of gold and silver (xxxvii.), who did not prove entirely satisfactory in all respects. <sup>343</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *tarttua*, *to stick* or *cling to*.

- 130 The bright lively youth,  
 Draws the sword from his girdle,  
 The bone biter from his side;  
 Struck the sea with the sword,  
 Stirs under the side (of the ship).
- 135 Himself rolled into the water,  
 Fell splash into the billow hands foremost.  
 Then the smith Ilmarinen,  
 Clung on to the hair of the hero,  
 Raised the man from the sea.
- 140 Himself spoke this in words:  
 'Every-one is formed to be a man,  
 Made to be a bearer of a beard,  
 To be a supplement to the number of a hundred,  
 To complete a thousand<sup>1</sup>.'
- 145 He draws the sword from his girdle,  
 The cruel iron from his sheath,  
 With which he smote the fish,

<sup>1</sup> This rather obscure remark appears to be a taunt. 'Every body is a man, in the sense of adding to the male population. But one wants a good deal more to really deserve the name.'

<sup>244</sup> Illative sing. of *tukka*, *hair*. <sup>245</sup> Part. sing. of *uros*, used as genitive. This use (which is hardly found in prose) is chiefly used of things which form part of something else. <sup>246</sup> 3rd sing. of *nostaltaa*, deriv. verb from *nostaa*, *to raise*. <sup>247</sup> Nominative sing. *all* (p. 170). <sup>248</sup> 2nd part. passive of *kyhätä*, *to form*; this word and *pantu* are followed by transitives to indicate the end for which a thing is made (p. 159). <sup>249</sup> Trans. sing. of *lisä*, *an addition*. <sup>250</sup> Allative sing. of *sataluku*, *hundred number* (*luvulle* is now the usual orthography, p. 14). <sup>251</sup> Allative sing. of *tuhat* (stem *tuhante*), *a thousand*. <sup>252</sup> Trans. sing. of *täyte* (stem *täyttehe*), *a complement or supplement* (*täysi*, *full*). <sup>253</sup> Elative sing. of *tuppi*, *sheath*, with affix of 3rd person. <sup>254</sup> Accusative sing. of *tuima*, *ferce*. <sup>255</sup> Adessive (p. 152) of *joka*, here used in sense *and with it*. <sup>256</sup> = *kolhaisti* or *kolkkaisti*, 3rd sing. imperf. of *kalhaista*, *to strike or split*.

- Alta <sup>355</sup> laian <sup>196</sup> läimähytti <sup>357</sup> ;  
 Miekka <sup>325</sup> murskaksi <sup>358</sup> mureni <sup>359</sup>,  
 150 Eipä hauki <sup>318</sup> tiennytkänä <sup>360</sup>.  
 v. xvi. 197, { Vaka vanha Väinämöinen  
 198. { Tuossa tuon sanoiksi virkki:  
 'Ei ole teissä <sup>361</sup> puolta <sup>362</sup> miestä <sup>164</sup>,  
 Ei urosta <sup>182</sup> kolmannesta <sup>363</sup> ;  
 155 Kun <sup>50</sup> konsa <sup>364</sup> tulevi <sup>190</sup> tarve <sup>365</sup>,  
 Miehen <sup>164</sup> mieltä <sup>165</sup> vaaitahan <sup>366</sup>,  
 Silloin <sup>367</sup> mieli <sup>168</sup> melkeässä <sup>368</sup>,  
 Kaikki <sup>347</sup> toimi <sup>369</sup> toisialla <sup>370</sup>.  
 Itse miekkansa <sup>325</sup> veälti <sup>371</sup>,  
 v. xxxvi. 326. Tempasi terävän rauan,  
 Työnti <sup>372</sup> miekkansa <sup>325</sup> merehen <sup>365</sup>,  
 Alle <sup>316</sup> laian <sup>198</sup> langetteli <sup>373</sup>  
 Kalahauin <sup>374</sup> hartioihin <sup>79</sup>,  
 v. line 120. Ve'en koiran konkkaluihin.  
 165 Miekka <sup>325</sup> luottihe <sup>375</sup> lujahan <sup>376</sup>,  
 Kitasihin <sup>377</sup> kiinnittihe <sup>378</sup> ;  
 Siitä <sup>340</sup> vanha Väinämöinen  
 Nostalti <sup>346</sup> kaloa <sup>327</sup> tuota <sup>67</sup>,  
 Vetä <sup>324</sup> haukia <sup>318</sup> ve'estä <sup>98</sup> :  
 170 Hauki <sup>31</sup> katkesi <sup>37</sup> kaheksi <sup>328</sup>,

<sup>357</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of läimähyttää (deriv. of läimätä), to smite.

<sup>358</sup> Trans. sing. of murska, a fragment (p. 158). N.B. The word is not in the plural and is almost adverbial, piecemeal. <sup>359</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of mureta, to break (stem murene, p. 94 F and 107). <sup>360</sup> = tietänyt

(p. 226, ix), 2nd part. act. of tietää, to perceive or know, with adv. affix kana. <sup>361</sup> v. p. 141, vii. <sup>362</sup> Part. sing. of puoli, half (p. 34);

for use of part. v. p. 122. <sup>363</sup> Part. sing. of kolmannes (stem -ekse), a third part. <sup>364</sup> Adv. when, used with kun to mean as soon as.

<sup>365</sup> Nominative sing. (stem tarpehe), need. <sup>366</sup> = vaaditaan, passive of vaatia, to demand. <sup>367</sup> Adv. then. <sup>368</sup> Inessive sing. of melkeä, moderate (? Russian мелкий); for use of inessive v. p. 140, iii.

The expression seems ironical, is in a very moderate state. <sup>369</sup> Nominative

Struck below the side (of the ship).  
 The sword broke into pieces,  
 150 The pike did not even perceive.  
     Prudent old Väinämöinen  
 On this spoke this in words :  
 ' There is not in you half a man,  
 Not the third part of a hero,  
 155 When need comes,  
 The mind of a man is wanted,  
 Then (your) mind fails,  
 All (your) sense is away.'  
     He himself drew his sword,  
 160 Seized the sharp iron  
 Struck his sword into the sea,  
 Smote below the side (of the ship)  
 On-to the neck of the pike fish,  
 On to the hip bones of the water dog.  
 165 The sword was driven home into the firm (flesh),  
 Fixed in the gills ;  
 Then old Väinämöinen  
 Brought up that fish,  
 Drew the pike from the water ;  
 170 The pike fell in two ;

sing. *business, duty, capacity* ; cf. for use here *ei ole hänellä tointa*.  
<sup>370</sup> Adessive of *toisia, another place* ; cf. *muualla*, and our expression *to be all abroad*.  
<sup>371</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *vedältää*, deriv. verb from

*vetää*.  
<sup>372</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *työntää*, *to thrust or smite*.  
<sup>373</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *langetella*, deriv. verb from *langettaa*, which is the causative form of *langeta, to fall*.  
<sup>374</sup> Compound of *kala, fish*, and

*hauki, pike*. The usual form would be *haukikala* (cf. *valaskala, a whale*).  
<sup>375</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. reflexive (p. 227) of *luottaa, to send through or drive*, a factitive form from *luoda*, one of whose meanings is *to cast* (v. No. 496).

<sup>376</sup> Illative sing. of *luja, firm*.  
<sup>377</sup> Illative plur. of *kitanen* (stem *-se*, diminutive of *kita*), *the gills of a fish*.

<sup>378</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. reflex. of *kiinnittää, to fix*, derived from *kiinni*.

- Pursto<sup>380</sup> pohjahan<sup>381</sup> putosi<sup>382</sup>,  
 Pää<sup>288</sup> kavahti<sup>383</sup> karpahasen<sup>384</sup>.  
 Jo<sup>12</sup> otti<sup>385</sup> venonen<sup>155</sup> juosta<sup>386</sup>,  
 Pääsi<sup>235</sup> pursi<sup>136</sup> puutoksesta<sup>387</sup>;  
 175 Vaka vanha Väinämöinen  
 Luotti<sup>388</sup> purren<sup>136</sup> luotoselle<sup>389</sup>,  
 Ravahutti<sup>390</sup> rantasehen<sup>391</sup>,  
 v. xxxvi. 321. Katsellevi, kääntelevi  
 Tuota<sup>67</sup> hauin<sup>318</sup> pääpaloa<sup>392</sup>,  
 r. xvi. 283. Itse tuon sanoiksi virkki:  
 'Ken<sup>393</sup> on vanhin<sup>18</sup> sulholoista<sup>394</sup>,  
 Sepä hauki halkomahan<sup>395</sup>,  
 Kala<sup>327</sup> viploin<sup>396</sup> viiltämähän<sup>397</sup>,  
 Pää<sup>298</sup> paloiksi<sup>322</sup> pahkomahan<sup>398</sup> !'  
 185 Mieh<sup>164</sup> purresta<sup>136</sup> puhuvat<sup>399</sup>,  
 Vaimot<sup>189</sup> lausui<sup>46</sup> laitasilta<sup>400</sup> :  
 'Saajanpa<sup>401</sup> käet<sup>81</sup> sulimmat<sup>402</sup>,  
 Sormet<sup>263</sup> pyytäjän<sup>403</sup> pyhimmät<sup>404</sup>.'  
 Vaka vanha Väinämöinen  
 190 Veti<sup>324</sup> veitsen<sup>405</sup> huotrastansa<sup>406</sup>,

<sup>379</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *katketa*, to break or fall asunder; cf. 326.

<sup>380</sup> = *pyrstö*, nominative sing. a tail. <sup>381</sup> Illative sing. of *pohja*, bottom or shore.

<sup>382</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *pujeta* (like *luvata*), to fall.

<sup>383</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *kavahtaa*, to leap forth or fall.

<sup>384</sup> Illative sing. of *karvas* (cf. *oas*, p. 40), a small boat. <sup>385</sup> 3rd

sing. imperf. of *ottaa*, here used intransitively, to start or begin. <sup>386</sup> 1st

sing. of stem *juokse* (cf. *syökse*, p. 107), to run or speed. <sup>387</sup> Elative

sing. of *puutos*, a hindrance (*puuttaa*, to hold or fasten). <sup>388</sup> 3rd

sing. imperf. act. of *luottaa*, v. 375. <sup>389</sup> Allative sing. of *luotonen*,

dimin. of *luoto*, island or shore. <sup>390</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *ravahuttaa*,

fact. form of *ravahtaa*, which is itself a deriv. of *ravata*, to move quickly;

cf. *ravakka*, quick. <sup>391</sup> Illative sing. of *rantanen*, dimin. of *ranta*,

shore. <sup>392</sup> Part. sing. (p. 127) of *pääpala*, compound of *pää*, head,

and *pala*, a piece. <sup>393</sup> Int. pron. (p. 60). <sup>394</sup> Elative plur. of

- The tail dropped to the bottom of the sea,  
 The head rolled into the boat.  
 Now the boat began to run,  
 The vessel got free from the impediment.
- 175 Prudent old Väinämöinen  
 Brought the vessel near to shore,  
 Drove her on to the strand,  
 Looked at and turned  
 That head-piece of the pike.
- 180 Himself spoke this in words:  
 'Who is the oldest of the youths,  
 (Let him come) to cut up the pike,  
 Divide the fish into pieces,  
 Split the head into bits.'
- 185 The men speak from the ship,  
 The women cry from the shore:  
 'The hands of the catcher are the purest,  
 The fingers of the seeker are the holiest.'
- 190 The prudent old Väinämöinen  
 Drew a knife from his sheath,

*sulho* a young man; for use of case, v. p. 143, viii. <sup>395</sup> Illative of 3rd infin. of *halkoa* (*halki*), to cleave. The verb on which the infinitive depends is omitted, but some such words as 'let him come' must be understood. <sup>396</sup> Instr. plur. of *viipa* (or *viipale*), a strip. For the nom. *hauki*, v. p. 128, iii (2). <sup>397</sup> Illative of 3rd infin. of *viiltää* (fact. of *viillä*), to split open. <sup>398</sup> Illative 3rd infin. of *pahkoa*, to cleave. <sup>399</sup> 3rd plur. pres. of *puhua*, to speak (original meaning to blow). <sup>400</sup> Ablative plur. of *laitanen* (stem *-se*), dimin. of *laita*, shore. <sup>401</sup> Genitive of *saaja*, noun of agency, from *saada*, to take (p. 45). <sup>402</sup> Nominative plur. of *sulin*, superlative of *sula*, flowing, active, or dexterous. <sup>403</sup> Genitive sing. of *pyytäjä* from *pyytää*, to catch; cf. No. 401. <sup>404</sup> Nominative plur. of *pyhin*, superl. of *pyhä*, holy. <sup>405</sup> Accusative sing. of *veitsi*, knife. <sup>406</sup> Elative sing. of *huotra*, a sheath, with affix of 3rd person.

- Kyleltänsä <sup>407</sup> kylmän <sup>408</sup> rauan <sup>85</sup>,  
 Jolla <sup>355</sup> hauin <sup>318</sup> halkaisevi <sup>409</sup>,  
 Pahkovi <sup>410</sup> kalan <sup>527</sup> paloiksi <sup>352</sup>,  
 v. xvi. 283. Itse tuon sanoiksi virkki :  
 195 ' Ken <sup>393</sup> on nuorin <sup>411</sup> neitosista <sup>412</sup>,  
 Sepä hauki keittämähän  
 Murkinaisiksi <sup>414</sup> muruiksi <sup>415</sup>,  
 Kalaisiksi <sup>416</sup> lounahiksi <sup>417</sup> !'  
 Kävi <sup>7</sup> neiet <sup>38</sup> keittämähän <sup>418</sup>,  
 200 Kävi <sup>7</sup> kilvan <sup>418</sup> kymmenenki <sup>419</sup> ;  
 Siitä <sup>340</sup> hauki <sup>318</sup> keitetähän <sup>420</sup>,  
 Murkinoinahan <sup>421</sup> muruina <sup>422</sup>,  
 Jäipä <sup>423</sup> luita <sup>424</sup> luotoselle <sup>389</sup>,  
 Kalanluita <sup>424</sup> kalliolle <sup>425</sup>.  
 205 Vaka vanha Väinämöinen  
 Noita <sup>226</sup> tuossa <sup>84</sup> katselevi,  
 v. xxxvi. 321. Katselevi, käantelevi,  
 v. xvi. 182. Sanan virkkoi, noin nimesi :  
 ' Mikä tuostaki <sup>426</sup> tulisi <sup>126</sup>,  
 210 Noista <sup>427</sup> hauin <sup>318</sup> hampahista <sup>428</sup>,  
 Leveästä <sup>429</sup> leukaluusta <sup>430</sup>,  
 Jos <sup>102</sup> oisi <sup>114</sup> sepon <sup>341</sup> pajassa <sup>431</sup>,  
 Luona <sup>432</sup> taitavan <sup>433</sup> takojan <sup>434</sup>,  
 Miehen <sup>164</sup> mahtavan <sup>435</sup> käsissä <sup>81</sup> ?'

<sup>407</sup> Ablative sing. of *kylki*, *side*, with affix of 3rd person. <sup>408</sup> Accusative sing. of *kylmä*, *cold*. <sup>409</sup> 3rd sing. pres. of *halkaista* (*halki*), *to split*.

<sup>410</sup> 3rd sing. pres. of No. 398. <sup>411</sup> Nominative sing. superl. of *nuori*, *young*.

<sup>412</sup> Elative plur. of *neitonen* (stem -*se*), dimin. of *neito*, *woman*.

<sup>413</sup> Illative of 3rd infin. of *keittää*, *to cook*; v. No. 395.

<sup>414</sup> Trans. plur. (p. 158) of *murkinainen*, adj. of *murkina*, *the midday meal*.

<sup>415</sup> Trans. plur. of *muru*, *fragment*. <sup>416</sup> Trans. plur. of *kalainen*, adj. formed from *kala*, *fish*.

<sup>417</sup> Trans. plur. of *lounas*, *midday meal*.

<sup>418</sup> Instr. sing. of *kilpa*, *strife* or *rivalry*.

<sup>419</sup> *kymmen*, *ten*, with affix *ki*. <sup>420</sup> Pres. passive of *keittää*.

The cold iron from his side,  
 With which he cuts up the pike,  
 Splits the fish into pieces.  
 Himself spoke this in words:—  
 195 'Who is the youngest of the women,  
 (Let her come) to cook the pike,  
 Into morsels for dinner,  
 Into a fish midday meal.'  
 The women went to cook,  
 200 Ten went in rivalry ;  
 Then the pike is cooked,  
 Pieces for dinner ;  
 The bones remained on the shore,  
 The fish bones on the edge of the sea.  
 205 The prudent old Väinämöinen  
 Looked at them there,  
 Looked, turned,  
 Spoke a word, thus uttered :  
 'What might come from this,  
 210 From these teeth of the pike,  
 From the broad jaw bone,  
 If it were in the smithy of a smith,  
 With a clever forger,  
 In the hands of a cunning man?'

<sup>421</sup> =murkinoidaan, pres. passive of murkinoita from murkina, *break-fast*. <sup>422</sup> Essive plur. from muru, *a bit*. <sup>423</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of jäädä, *to remain*, with affix pä, followed by allative (p. 156). <sup>424</sup> Part. plur. of luu, *bone*. <sup>425</sup> Allative of kallio, *rock*. <sup>426</sup> Elat. sing. of pron. tuo, with suffix ki. <sup>427</sup> Elat. plur. of same. <sup>428</sup> Elative plur. (p. 143, ix) of hammas (stem hampaha), *tooth*. <sup>429</sup> Elative of leveä, *broad*. <sup>430</sup> Elative of leuka-luu, *jaw-bone*. <sup>431</sup> Inessive of paja, *a smithy*. <sup>432</sup> Essive of luo (p. 210), here prepos. with genitive. <sup>433</sup> Genitive of 1st part. act. of taitaa, *to be able or skilful*. <sup>434</sup> Genitive of takoja, *forger*, from takoa, *to forge*. <sup>435</sup> Genitive of mahtava, *powerful*.



- 215 Sanoi<sup>128</sup> seppo<sup>184</sup> Ilmarinen :  
 'Ei tule<sup>126</sup> tyhjästä<sup>436</sup> mitänä<sup>437</sup>,  
 Kalan<sup>527</sup> ruotasta<sup>438</sup> kalua<sup>439</sup>,  
 Ei seponkana<sup>341</sup> pajassa,  
 v. lines 213, } Luona taitavan takojan,  
 214. } Miehen mahtavan käsissä.'
- v. xvi. 283. Vaka vanha Väinämöinen  
 Itse tuon sanoiksi virkki :  
 'Näistäpä<sup>180</sup> toki tulisi<sup>126</sup>  
 Kalanluinen<sup>424</sup> kanteloinen<sup>440</sup>,  
 225 Kun<sup>50</sup> oisi<sup>114</sup> osoajata<sup>441</sup>,  
 Soiton<sup>442</sup> luisen<sup>424</sup> laatiata<sup>443</sup>.'  
 Kun<sup>50</sup> ei toista<sup>10</sup> tullutkana<sup>175</sup>,  
 Ei ollut osoajata<sup>441</sup>,  
 v. line 226. Soiton luisen laatiata,  
 230 Vaka vanha Väinämöinen  
 Itse loihe<sup>444</sup> laatiaksi<sup>443</sup>,  
 Tekiäksi<sup>445</sup> teentelihe<sup>446</sup>;  
 Laati<sup>153</sup> soiton<sup>442</sup> hauinluisen<sup>454</sup>,  
 Suoritti<sup>447</sup> ilon<sup>448</sup> ikuisen<sup>449</sup>.  
 235 Kust'<sup>450</sup> on koppa<sup>451</sup> kanteletta<sup>452</sup> ?  
 Hauin<sup>318</sup> suuren<sup>453</sup> leukaluusta<sup>450</sup> ;  
 Kust'<sup>450</sup> on naulat<sup>454</sup> kanteletta<sup>452</sup> ?  
 Ne on hauin<sup>318</sup> hampahista<sup>428</sup> ;  
 Kusta<sup>450</sup> kielet<sup>454</sup> kanteletta<sup>452</sup> ?

<sup>436</sup> Elative of *tyhjä*, *void* or *emptiness*. <sup>437</sup> = *mitään*, v. p. 219 and 122.

<sup>438</sup> Elative sing. of *ruotta*, *mouth* (of a fish); *ruota* or *ruoto* is the usual form. <sup>439</sup> Part. sing. of *kalu*, *an instrument* (p. 122).

<sup>440</sup> Dimin. of *kantelo* = *kantele*, *a kind of harp with five strings*. <sup>441</sup> = *osaajaa*, part. of *osaaja*, noun of agency, from *osata*, *to know* or *be skilful*.

<sup>442</sup> Genitive sing. of *soitto*, *a musical instrument*. <sup>443</sup> Part. of *laatiija*, noun of agency from *laatia*, *to make*. The part. is used because the sentence is practically negative.

<sup>444</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. reflex. of *luoda*, *to create* or *make*. <sup>445</sup> Translative

- 215 Said the smith, Ilmarinen:—  
 'There comes not anything from nothingness,  
 No instrument from the mouth of a fish,  
 Not even in the smithy of a smith,  
 With a clever forger,  
 220 In the hands of a cunning man.'  
 Prudent old Väinämöinen  
 Himself spoke this in words:  
 'Yet from these might come  
 A fish-bone harp,  
 225 Were there but an artist,  
 A maker of bone playing-instruments.'  
 When there came no other,  
 (When there) was not any artist,  
 (No) maker of bone playing-instruments,  
 230 Prudent old Väinämöinen  
 Himself became a maker,  
 Appeared as a fabricator:  
 Made an instrument of pike-bone,  
 Made ready an eternal joy.  
 235 Of what is the body of the harp?  
 Of the jaw-bone of the great pike.  
 Of what are the pegs of the harp?  
 They are the teeth of the pike.  
 Of what are the strings of the harp?

(p. 158, iii) of *tekijä*, noun of agency, from *tehdä*, *to make*. <sup>446</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. reflex. of *teennellä*, deriv. of *tehdä* (stem *teke*), *to make*.  
<sup>447</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *suorittaa* (from *suora*), *to prepare*. <sup>448</sup> Accusative sing. of *ilo*, *joy*. <sup>449</sup> Accusative sing. of *ikuinen*, from *ikä*, *life*.  
<sup>450</sup> Elative sing. of *kuka*, meaning here *from what* (p. 144, ix). <sup>451</sup> Nominative sing., *the body or frame (of the harp)*. <sup>452</sup> Part. sing. of *kantele* (stem *-lehe*), *harp*; for use of part. v. No. 345. <sup>453</sup> Genitive sing. of *suuri*, *great*. <sup>454</sup> Nominatives plur. of *kieli*, *tongue* or *string*, and *naula*, *a nail*.

240

Hivuksista <sup>455</sup> Hiien <sup>456</sup> ruunan <sup>457</sup>.  
 Jo oli soitto <sup>449</sup> suorittuna <sup>458</sup>,  
 Valmihina <sup>459</sup> kanteloinen <sup>440</sup>,  
 Soitto <sup>442</sup> suuri <sup>455</sup> hauinluinen <sup>421</sup>,  
 Kantelo <sup>440</sup> kalaneväinen <sup>460</sup>.

## FINNISH POPULAR SONG.

- Hyvästi <sup>461</sup> kultaseni <sup>462</sup>, hyvästi kultani,  
 Mun <sup>86</sup> lähtää <sup>1</sup> nyt <sup>463</sup> täytyy <sup>464</sup> pois <sup>465</sup> kotimaaltan <sup>466</sup>.  
 Mun <sup>66</sup> täytyvi <sup>464</sup> nyt <sup>463</sup> mennä <sup>294</sup> merille <sup>295</sup> kulkemaan <sup>240</sup>!  
 Ja sinua en tieä <sup>466a</sup> jos <sup>102</sup> näen <sup>466b</sup> millonkaan <sup>467</sup>.  
 5 Lahella <sup>468</sup> laiva <sup>469</sup> pieni <sup>470</sup> minua outtelee <sup>471</sup>;  
 Se mulla <sup>472</sup> kotimaani <sup>466</sup> ja tuttavani <sup>475</sup> lie <sup>285</sup>.  
 Se kotimaani <sup>466</sup> mulla <sup>472</sup> ja tuuli <sup>474</sup> kultani <sup>462</sup>,  
 Ja aalto <sup>99</sup> armahani <sup>475</sup> tahikka <sup>476</sup> surmani <sup>60</sup>.  
 Jo <sup>12</sup> ennen <sup>477</sup> monta <sup>478</sup> miestä <sup>1c4</sup> se meri <sup>295</sup> petteli <sup>479</sup>,  
 10 Ja monen <sup>478</sup> kullan <sup>463</sup> silmät <sup>480</sup> vesille <sup>481</sup> jätteli <sup>482</sup>.

<sup>455</sup> Elative plur. of *hivus* = *hius* (stem *hiukse*), *hair*. <sup>456</sup> = *Hiiden*, genitive sing. of *Hiisi*, *the genius of evil*. <sup>457</sup> Genitive sing. of *ruuna*, poetical word for *a horse*. <sup>458</sup> Essive sing. of 2nd part. passive (= *suoritettuna*) of *suorittaa*. <sup>459</sup> Essive sing. of *valmis*, *ready* (stem *valmihi*). <sup>460</sup> Compound word; first member in genitive, second adj. formed from *evä*, *a fin*.

<sup>461</sup> Adv. of *hyvä*, *good* (p. 117), used to mean *good-bye*. <sup>462</sup> Dimin. of *kulta*, *gold* or *darling*, with affix of 1st person. <sup>463</sup> Adv. *now*. <sup>464</sup> Impers. verb *it is necessary*, followed by 1st infin. (p. 187); *täytyy* and *täytyvi* are identical (p. 226. viii). <sup>465</sup> Adv. *away*, also used in inessive poissa. <sup>466</sup> Compound of *koti*, *home*, and *maa*, *land*; v. No. 65. <sup>466a</sup> = *tiedä*, negative form of *tietää*, *to know*. <sup>466b</sup> 1st pers. sing. of *nähdä* (p. 108). <sup>467</sup> = *millonkaan* (v. pp. 117, 169). <sup>468</sup> = *lahdella*, adessive sing. of *lahti*, *bay*. <sup>469</sup> Nominative sing. *a ship*. <sup>470</sup> Nomi-

240 Of the hairs of the courser of Hiisi.  
 Now the instrument was prepared,  
 The harp made ready,  
 A great instrument of pike-bone,  
 A harp of fish-fins.

Farewell, dear love, farewell, my love,  
 Now must I set forth from home.  
 Now I must go to wander on the seas  
 And know not if I shall ever see thee.  
 5 A little ship awaits me in the bay:  
 It will be my home and friend.  
 It will be my home and the wind my love,  
 And the wave my darling or my death.  
 That sea has lured many men ere now,  
 10. And filled many a lover's eyes with tears.

native sing. *little*. <sup>471</sup> = *odottelee*, 3rd sing. pres. of *odotella*,  
 deriv. from *odottaa*, *to wait*. <sup>472</sup> = *minulla*; cf. *muu* = *minua*.  
<sup>473</sup> 1st part. passive for *tunnettava*, from *tuntea*, *to know*. Here used as  
 substantive with affix of 1st pers., *friend*. <sup>474</sup> Nominative sing. *wind*.  
<sup>475</sup> Nominative with suffix of 1st pers. from stem *armaha* (nom. *armas*),  
*dear*. <sup>476</sup> = *taikka*, *or*. <sup>477</sup> Adv. (gen. of *ensi*), *before*.  
<sup>478</sup> Part. sing. of *moni*, *many*, taking a partitive after it (p. 171, iv.).  
<sup>479</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *petellä*, deriv. verb from *pettää*, *to deceive*.  
<sup>480</sup> Accusative plur. of *silmä*, *eye*. <sup>481</sup> Allative plur. of *vesi*, *water*.  
<sup>482</sup> 3rd sing. imperf. of *jätellä*, derived from *jättää*. For the use of this  
 verb with the illative or allative, v. p. 156. The sentence means literally  
*has abandoned the eyes of many a lover to waters*; i. e. has filled with  
 tears.

